

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/

Br. forn Milner, Dewstony, Feb 1

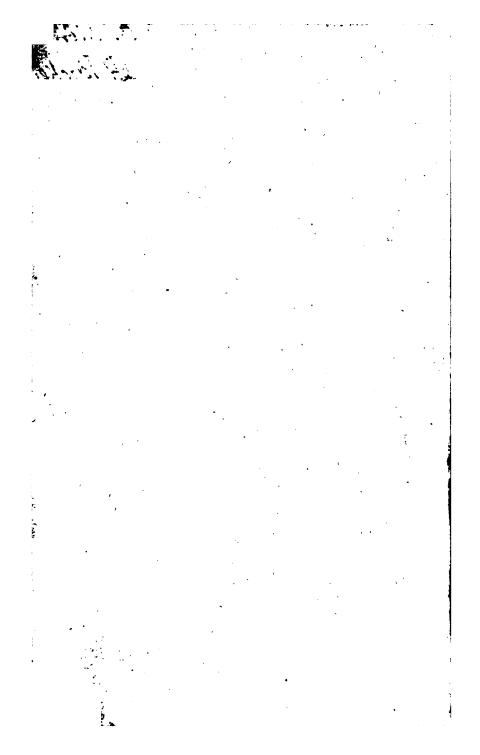
92 € 150.

3416

men : 1000 all 1841. 1/6

1 m

13.45



A

Collection of PAPERS,

Which passed between the late Learned

Mr. LEIBNITZ,

AND

Dr. C L A R K E,

In the Years 1715 and 1716.

Relating to the

PRINCIPLES

O F

Natural Philosophy and Religion.

With an APPENDIX,

To which are added,

LETTERS to Dr. CLARKE concerning Liberty and Necessity; From a Gentleman of the University of Cambridge: With the Doctor's ANSWERS to them.

ALSO

REMARKS upon a Book, Entituled, A Philosophical Enquiry concerning Human Liberty.

By SAMUEL CLARKE, D. D. Rector of St. James's Westminster.

LONDON: Primed for JAMES KNAPTON, at the Crown in St. Paul's Church-Tard. MDCC XVII.

ing the second of the second o

The Hall Market

)/ UNIX

Section 2 may 1715 miles of

CEMCLESES

BODI. LIGA -9FEB 1916 OXFORD

The state of the s



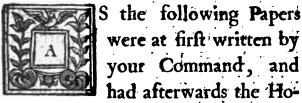
TO HER

ROYAL HIGHNESS,

THE

Princess of WALES.

M A D A: M,



nour of being severally transmitted

A 2 through

through Your Royal Highnesses Hands: so the Principal Encouragement upon which they Now presume to appear in Publick, is the Permission they have of coming forth under the Protection of so Illustrious a Name.

The late Learned Mr. Leibnitz well understood, how great an Honour and Reputation it would be to him, to have his Arguments approved by a Person of Your Royal Highnesses Character. But the same steady Impartiality and unalterable Love of Truth, the same constant Readiness to hear and to submit to Reason, always so conspicuous, always shining forth so brightly in Your Royal Highnesses Conduct, which justly made Him desirous to exert in these Papers his utmost Skill

The DEDICATION.

in defending his Opinions; was at the same time an Equal Encouragement to such as thought him in an Error, to endeavour to prove that his Opinions could not be defended.

The Occasion of his giving your Royal Highness the Trouble of his First Letter, he declares to be his having entertained some Suspicions, that the Foundations of Natural Religion were in danger of being hurt by Sir Isaac Newton's Philofophy. It appeared to Me, on the contrary, a most certain and evident Truth, that from the earliest Antiquity to This Day, the Foundations of Natural Religion had never been so deeply and so firmly laid, as in the Mathematical and Experimental Philosophy of That Great Man. And Your Royal A 3

Royal Highnesses singular Exactness in searching after Truth, and earmest Concern for every thing that is of real Consequence to Religion, could not permit those Suspicions, which had been suggested by a Gentleman of such eminent Note in the Learned World as Mr. Leibnest was, to remain unanswered.

Chistianity presupposes the Truth of Natural Religion. Whatsoever subverts Natural Religion, does consequently much more subvert Christianity: and whatsoever tends to consirm Natural Religion, is proportionably of Service to the True Interest of the Christian. Natural Philosophy therefore, so far as it affects Religion, by determining Questions concerning Liberty and Fate, concerning the Extent of the

the Powers of Matter and Motion, and the Proofs from Phenomena, of God's Continual Government of the World; is of very Great Importance. Tis of Singular Use, rightlyto understand, and carefully to distinguish from Hypotheses or mere Suppositions, the True and Certain Consequences of Experimental and Mathematical Philosophy; Which do, with wonderful Strength and Advantage, to All Such as are capable of apprehending them, confirm, establish, and vindicate against all Objections, those Great and Fundamental Truths of Natural Religion, which the Wisdom of Providence has at the same time univerfally implanted, in some degree, in the Minds of Persons even of the Meanust Capacities, not qua-A 4

lified to examine Demonstrative

Tis with the highest Pleasure and Satisfaction, that the following Papers upon so important a Subject, are laid before a Princess, who, to an inimitable Sweetness of Temper, Candour and Affability towards All, has joined not only an Impartial Love of Truth, and a Desire of promoting Learning in general, but has Herself also attained to a Degree of Knowledge very Particular and Unicommon, even in matters of the nicest and most abstract Speculation: And whose Sacred and always Unshaken Regard to the Interest of fineere and uncorrupt Religions made Her the Delight of all Goods Protestants Abroad, and by a just Fame filled خيد ت

at Home, with an Expectation beforehand, which, Great as it was, is fully answered by what they now see and are blessed with.

By the Protestant Succession in the Illustrious House of HANOVER having taken place, This Nation has Now, with the Bleffing of God, a Certain Prospect, (if our Own Vices and Follies prevent not,) of seeing Government actually administred, according to the Defign' and End for which it was instituted by Providence, with no other View than that of the Publick Good, the general Welfare vand Happiness of Mankind. We have a Prospect of seeing the True Liberty of a Brave and Loyal People, firmly secured, established, 3 OHA

The DEDICATION:

and regulated, by Laws equally advantageous both to the Crown, and Subject: Of leeing Learning and . Knowledge encouraged and promoted, in opposition to all kinds of Ignorance and Blindness: And, (which is the Glory of All,) of feeing the True Christian Temper and Spirit of Religion effectually prevail, both against Atheism and Infidelity on the one hand, which take off from Men All Obligations of doing what is Right; and against Superstition and Bigottry on the other hand, which lay upon men the strongest Obligations to do the greatest Wrongs.

What Views and Expectations less than these, can a Nation reafunably entertain; when it beholds a KING firmly settled upon the Throne

Throne of a wisely limited Monarchy, whose Will, when without Eimitation, showed always a greater Love of Justice, than of Power : and never took Pleasure in asting ally otherwise, than according to the most perfect Laws of Reason and Equity? When it sees a Succellion of the same Blessings continued, in a PRINCE, whose Noble Openness of Mind, and Generous Warmth of Zeal for the Preservation of the Protestant Religion, and the Laws and Liberties of these Kingdoms, make him every day more and more beloved, as he is more known? And when these glorious Hopes open still further into an unbounded Prospect in a numerous Royal Offspring? Through whom, that the Just and Equitable Temper of the Grandfather; the

the Noble Zeal and Spirit of the Father; the Affability, Goodness, and Judicious Exactness of the Mother; may, with Glory to Themfelves, and with the happiest Influences both upon These and Foreign Countries, descend to all succeeding Generations; to the Establishment of Universal Peace, of Truth and Right amongst Men; and to the entire rooting out That Greatest Enemy of Christian Religion, the Spirit of Popery both among Romanists and Protestants: And that Your Royal Highness may your Self long live, to continue a Bleffing to these Nations, to see Truth and Virtue flourish in your own Days, and to be a Great Instrument, under the direction of Providence, in laying a Foundation for the Highest Happiness of the **Publick**

Publick in Times to come; is the Prayer of,

Madam,

4. 1. 1. 1. 7

Your ROYAL HIGHNESSES

most Humble and

most Obedient Servant,

SAM. CLARKE.



AVERTISSEMENT.

On prie les Lecteurs de remarquer:

- 1. QUE les Ecrits suivans ont été imprimez conformément aux Originaux, sans ajouter, retrancher, ou changer un seul mot. On n'a ajouté que les Notes marginales & l'Appendice.
- 2. Que la Traduction est fort exacte, • qu' elle represente le véritable sens de Mr. Leibnitz.
 - 3. Que les Nombres ou les Sections de chaque Ecrit de Mr. Clarke, se rapportent aux Nombres ou aux Sections de chaque Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz, qui précede immédiatement.

Advertisement to the READER.

The Reader will be pleased to observe,

- 1. I HAT the following Letters are all printed exactly as they were written; without adding, diminishing, or altering a Word. The Marginal Notes only, and the Appendix, being added.
- 2. That the Translation is made with Great Exactness, to prevent any Misrepresentation of Mr. Leibnitz's Sense.
- 3. That the Numbers or S's in Each of Dr. Clarke's Papers, refer respectively to the Numbers or S's of each of Mr. Laibnize's Papers immediately fore-going.

ERRATA.

Pag. Lin	e in the second of the second
12, 13	dele, c'est à dire.
81, 26.	
122, 11.	in margin. & 4.
143, 1,	by a reprefereative
152, 19.	After the word, manifeste, add; Et le raison-
	nement sera le même, par rapport à la matiere
· ·	dont les Especes particulieres des Corps sont
,	composées, soit que l'on suppose que les pores
	sont unides, ou qu'ils sont remplis d'une ma-
(C) (C)	tiere etrangere.
153, 11.	After the word, Absurdity, add; And the Argu-
•	ment is the same, with regard to the Matter of
· ·	which any particular Species of Bodies is com-
	posed, whether its Pores be supposed empty, ar
	always full of extraneous matter.
199, 9.	A, and to B,
202, 14.	dans ce troisieme
213,-23.	abstract
220, 25.	expliqué
● 96, 16.	préétablie
241, ult.	is the fame
242, 5.	lefquell es
246, 24.	Action,
263, ult.	at the bottom, every thing will be either
265, 26.	Miracle; or
298, 12.	proportion
306, 25:	After the word, Experience, add; Voiez ma
•	quatrieme Replique, § 7; & cinquieme Répliq
	que, § 33.
307, 22.	After the word, Experience, add; See my Fourth
	Reply, § 7; & Fifth Reply, § 33.
330, 22.	pelent fur le bras
339, 11.	Absurdities
348, 20.	sans commencement & sans fin.
350, 10.	nous disons
390, 15.	pulchrè
391, 4.	Thoughts, shall be
398, 1.	liées
7•	appercevons pas
	To the DWM ADWS day.

that all the Actions Mechanical & involuntary.

Mr. LEIBNITZ's

FIRST PAPER.

And American and the first of t



Prémier Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

Extrait d' une Lettre écrite au Mois de Novembre, 1715.

turelle même s' affoiblit extremement. Plusieurs font les Ames corporelles; d' autres font Dieu luymême corporel.

2. M. Locke, & ses Sestateurs, doutent au moins, si les Ames ne sant Materielles,

& naturellement perissables.

3. M. Newton dit que l'Espace est l'Organe, dont Dieu se sert pour sentir les choses. Mais s' il a besoin de quelque Moyen pour les sentir, elles ne dependent donc entierement de luy, & ne sont point sa production.

4. Monsieur Newton, & ses Sestateurs, ont encore une fort plaisante Opinion de l'ouvrage



Mr. LEIBNITZ's First Paper.

BEING

An Extract of a Letter Written in November, 1715.

to decay [in England] very much. Many will have Human Souls to be material:

Others make God bimfelf a corporeal Being, 2. Mr. Locke, and his Followers, are uncertain at least, whether the Soul be not Material, and naturally perishable.

3. Sir Isaac Newton says, that Space is an Organ, which God makes use of to perceive Things by. But if God stands in need of any Organ to perceive Things by, it will follow, that they do not depend altogether upon him, nor were produced by him.

4. Sir *Ifaac Newton*, and his Followers, have also a very odd Opinion concerning

B 2

4 Prémier Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

l'ouvrage de Dieu. Selon eux Dieu a besoin de remonter de temps en temps sa Montre: Autrement elle cesseroit d'agir. Il n'a pas eu assez de veue, pour en faire un Mouvement perpetuel. Cette Machine de Dieu est même si imparfaite selon eux, qu'il est obligé de la décrasser de temps en temps par un concours extraordinaire, & même de la raccommoder, comme un Horloger son ouvrage; qui sera d'autant plus mauvais Maistre, qu'il sera plus souvent obligé d'y retoucher & d'y corriger. Selon mon Sentiment, la même Force & Vigueur y subsiste toujours, & passe seulement

the Work of God According to their Doctrine, God Almighty wants to mind up his Watch from Time to Time to Otherwise it would cease to move. He had not, it seems, sufficient Foresight to make it a perpetual Motion. Nay, the Machine of God simaking, is so imperfect, according to these Gentlemen; that he is obliged to clean it now and then by an extraordinary Concourse, and even to mend it, as a Clockmaker mends his Work; Who must consequently be so much the more unskilful a Workman, as he is oftner obliged to mend his Work and to set it Right. According

^{*} The Place Mr. Leibnitz here seems to allude to, is as follows. Dum Cometæ moventur in Orbibus valde cecentricis, undiq, & quoquoversum in omnes Coeli Partes; utiq; nullo modo fieri potuit, ut cæco fato tribuendum fit, quod Planetze in Orbibus concentricis motu confimili ferantur codem omnes; exceptis nimirum irregularitatibus quibusdam vix notatu dignis, que ex mutuis Cometarum & Planetarum in se invicem actionibus oriri potuerint, quæq; verifimile est fore ut longinquitate temporis majores usq; evadant; donec hæc Naturæ Compages manum emendatricem tandem sit desideratura. i. e. Whilst the Comets move in Orbs very eccentrical, with all variety of Directions towards every Part of the Heavens; 'tis not posfible it should have been caused by Blind Fate, that the Planets All move with one similar Direction in concentrick -Orbs: excepting only some very small irregularities; which may have arisen from the mutual Astions of the Planets and Comets one upon another; and which 'tis probable will in length of time increase more and more, till the present System of Nature shall want to be anew put in Order by its Author. Newtoni Optice, Quæst ult. pag. 346.

seulement de matiere en matiere, suivant les loix de la Nature, & le bel'Ordre préétabli. Et je tiens, quand Dieu fait des Miracles, que ce n'est pas pour soutenir les besoins de la Nature, mais pour ceux de la Grace. En juger autrement, ce seroit avoir une idée fort basse de la Sagesse de la Puissance de Dieu.

Marie Toron Lear Weller of the Control of the Contr

and Artist and Substitute of the Communication (Communication) and the

A CANADA CONTRACTOR OF A CANADA CONTRACTOR OF

Premi-

 C_{i}

to My Opinion, the † same Force | and Vigour remains always in the World, and only passes from one part of Matter to another, agreeably to the Laws of Nature, and the beautiful pre-established Order. And I hold, that when God works Miracles, he does not do it in order to supply the Wants of Nature, but those of Grace. Whoever thinks otherwise, must needs have a very mean Notion of the Wisdom and Power of God.

† See the Nove on Dr. Clarke's Fifth Reply, § 93, - 95. See Appendix, N° 2. Also Mr. Leibnitz's Fifth Paper, § 87, and 91.



B 4 Dr. CLARKE'S

&:\$*\$*\$*\$*\$*

Premiere Replique de Mr. CLARKE.

rable, qu'il y a en Angleterre, aussi bien qu'en d'autres païs, des personnes, qui nient même la Réligion Naturelle, ou qui la corrompent extrémement. Mais, après le déreglement des moeurs, on doit attribuer cela principalement à la fausse Philosophie des Materialistes, qui est directement combatue par les Principes Mathematiques de la Philosophie. Il est vrai aussi, qu'il y a des personnes, qui font l'Ame materielle, & Dieu lui-même corporel; mais ces genslà se déclarent ouvertement contre les Principes Mathematiques de la Philosophie, qui sont les seuls Principes qui prouvent que la Matiere est la plus petite & la moins considerable Partie de l'Univers.

2. Il y a quelques endroits dans les Ecrits de Mr. Locke, qui pourroient faire soupgonner avec raison, qu'il doutoit de l'Immaterialité de l'Ame; mais il n'a été suivi en cela que par quelques Materialistes, Ennemis des Principes Mathematiques de la Philosophie,

Dr. CLARKE's First Reply.

THAT there are some in England. as well as in other Countries, who deny or very much corrupt even Natural Religion it self, is very true, and much to be lamented. But (next to the vitious Affections of Men) this is to be principally ascribed to the false Philosophy of the Materialists, to which the Mathematick Principles of Philosophy are the most directly repugnant. That Some make the Souls of Men, and Others even God himself to be a Corporeal Being ; is also very true: But those who do so are the great Enemies of the Mathematical Principles of Philosophy; which Principles, and which alone, prove Marter, or Body, to be the smallest and most inconsiderable. Part of the Universe.

.2. That Mr. Locke doubted whether the Soul was immaterial or no, may justly be suspected from some Parts of his Writingso: But herein he has been followed only by some Materialists, Enemies to the Mathematical Principles of Philosophy; and who common de la commencia de la c

 $x'' \cup x'' \in S$

10 Premiere Replique de Mr. Clarke.

losophie, & qui n'approuvent presque rien dans les Ouvrages de Mr. Locke que ses Erreurs.

. 3. Mr. le Chevalier Newton ne dit pas, que l' Espace est l' Organe, dont Dieu se sert pour appercevoir les choses. Il ne dit pas non plus, que Dieu ait besoin d'aucun moyen pour les appercevoir. Au contraire, il dit que Dieu, étant present par tout, apperçoit les choses par sa presence immédiate, dans tout l'Espace où elles sont, sans l'intervention ou le secours d'aucun Organe, ou d'aucun moyen. Pour rendre cela plus intelligible, il l'éclaircit par une Comparaison. Il dit que comme l'Ame, étant immédiatement presente aux Images, qui se forment dans te Cerveau par le moyen des Organes des Sens, voit ces Images comme fi elles étoiont les choses mêmes qu'elles representent ; de même, Dieu voit tout par sa presence mimédiate, étant actuellement present aux choses mêmes, à toutes les choses qui sont dans l'Univers, comme l'Ame est presente à toutes les Images, qui se forment dans le Cerveau. Mr. Newton considere le Cerveau & les Organes des Sens, comme le Moyen par lequel ces Images sont formées; & non comme le Moyen par lequel l'Ame voit ou apperçoit ces Images, lers qu' elles sont ainsi formées. Et dans l'Univers, il ne considere pas les choses, comme si elles étoient des Images formées par un certain Moyen ou par des Organes, mais comme des choses réelles, approve little or nothing in Mr. Locke's

Writings, but his Etrors.

2. Sir Isaac Newton doth not say, that Space is the Organ which God makes use of to perceive Things by; nor that he has need of any Medium at all, whereby to perceive Things: But on the contrary, that he, being Omnipresent, perceives all Things by his immediate Presence to them. in all Space whereever they are, without the Intervention or Assistance of any Or. gan or Medium whatsoever. In order to make this more intelligible, he illustrates it by a Similitude: That as the Mind of Man, by its immediate Presence to the Pi-Etures or Images of Things, form'd in the Brain by the means of the Organs of Sensation, sees those Pictures as if they were the Things themselves; so God sees all Things, by his immediate Presence to them: he being actually present to the Things themselves, to all Things in the Universe; as the Mind of Man is present to all the Pictures of Things formed in his Brain. Sir Isaac Newton considers the Brain and Organs of Sensation, as the Means by which those Pictures are formed; but not as the Means by which the Mind sees or perceives those Pictures, when they are so formed. And in the Universe, he doth not confider Things as if they were Pidures, formed by certain Means, or Organs;

12 Premiere Replique de Mr. Clarke.

reelles, que Dien luismeme a formées, cir qu'il voit dans tous les lieux où elles sont, sans l'interuntion d'aucun Moyen. Q'est tout ce que Mr. Newton a voulu dire par la Comparaison, dont il s'est sevi, lors qui il suppose que l'Espace insini fiest, (pout aims si dire,) le Sensorium de l'Etre qui est present par tout.

4. Si, parmi les Hommes, un Ouvrier passe avec raison pour être d'autant plus babile, que la Macbine qu'il a fait, con-

[†] Voici le Passage dont il s'agie. Annos Sensorium Animalium. &c. i. e. C'est-à-dire : Le Sensorium des Animaux n'est-il pas le Lieu, où la Substance qui apperçoit, est presente, & dù les Images sensibles des choses sont portées par les Nerss & le Cervau, asin qu'elles y soient apperçoit. Et les Phénomenes de la Nature ne sont-ils pas voir, qu'il y a un Esre Incorporel, Vivaa, Intelligent, Present par tout, qui, dans l'Espace insuit, lequel est, pour ainsi dire, son Sensorium (un let lieu où il apperçoit,) voit & discerne de la maniere la plus intimé & la plus parsaite, les choses mêmes; & les comprend, comme étant entierement & immédiatement presentes en lui? An lieu que la Substante, qui apperçoit & qui pense en Now, n'apperçoit & ne contemple dans son petit Sensorium, que les Images de ces choses; sesquelles (Images) y sont portèes par les Organes des Sens. Newvini Optice, Quast. 20. pagi 315.

gans; but as real! Things, form'd by God himself, and seen by him in all Places whereever they are; without the Intervention of any Medium at all. And this Similitude is all that he means, when he supposes Infinite Space † to be (as it were) the Sensarium of the Omnipresent Being.

4. The Reason why, among Men, an Artificer is justly esteemed so much the more skilful, as the Machine of his composing

The Possage referred to, is as follows: Annon Sensorium Animalium, 'est Loens cui Substantia sentiens adest, & in quem sensibiles rerum Species per nervos & cerebrum desefuntur, ut ibi præsentes à præsente sentiri possint ? Atque ---- annoà en Phanomenis constat, este Emem Incorporeuni, Vivencem, Intelligencem, Omnipræsencem, qui in Spatio infinito, Tanquam Sensorio suo, Res Ipsas intime cernat, penitule, perspiciat, totalq, intra le præsens præsentes complectatur; quarum quidem rerium, Id quod in Nobis sentir & cogitat, Imagines tantum ad se per Organa Sensuum delaras, in Sensoriolo suo percipit & contuernr? i. e. Is not the Sensory of Animals, the Place where the Perceptive Substance is present, and To which the Sensible Images of Things are convey'd by the Nerves and Brain, that they may there be Perceived, as being Present to the Perceptive Substance? And do not the Phienomena of Nature show, that there is an Incorporeal, Living, Intelligent, Omnipresent Being, who in the Infinite Space, which is as it were His Sensoninne (or Place of Perception,) sees and discerns, in the inmost and shoft Thorongh Manner, the Very Things themselves, and comprehends them as being entirely and immediately Present within Himself; Of which Things, the Perceptive and Thinking Substance that is in Us, perceives and views, in its Little Scolory, nothing but the Images, conveyed thither by the Organs of the Senses? Newtoni Optice, Quast. 20. baff 3122- [

Premiere Replique de Mr. Clarke. 14

tinue plus long temps d'avoir un mouvement réglé, sans qu'elle ait desoin d'être re-touchée; c'est parce que l'habileté de tous les Ouvriers Humains ne consiste qu'à composer & à joindre certaines pieces, qui ont un mouvement, dont les Principes sont tout-à-fait indépendans de l'Ouvrier; comme les Poids & les Ressorts, &c. dont les forces inc sont pas produites par l'Ouvrier, qui ne fait que les ajuster & les joindre ensemble. Mais il en est tout autrement à l'égard de Dieu; qui non seulement compose & arrange les choses, mais encore est l'Auteur de leurs Puissances Primitives, au de leurs Forces Mouvantes, & les conserve perpetuellement: Et par conséquent, dire qu'il ne se fait rien sans sa Providence & son Inspection, ce n'est pas avilir son Ouvrage, mais plûtôt en faire connoître la grandeur & l'excellence. L'idée de ceux qui soutiennent, que le Monde est une grande Machine, qui se meut sans que Dieu y intervienne, comme une Horloge continue de se mouvoir sans le secours de l'Horloger; cette idée, dis-je, introduit le Materialisme O la Fatalité; O sous prétexte de faire Dieu une * Intelligentia Supra-mundana, elle tend effectivement à bannir du monde la dix, N° 1. Providence & le Gouvernement de Dieu. J'ajoute que par la mêmo raison qu'un Philosophe peut s'imaginer, que tout se passe dans le Monde, depuis qu'il a été créé, sans que la

* Voyez l'Appen-

will continue longer to move regularly without any farther Interpolition of the Workman; is because the skill of all Human Artificers confifts only in composing, adjusting, or putting together certain Movements, the Principles of whose Motion are altogether independent upon the Artificer: Such as are Weights and Springs, and the like; whose forces are not made, but only adjusted, by the Workman. But with regard to God, the Case is quite different; because He not only composes or puts Things together, but is himself the Author and continual Preserver of their Original Forces or moving Powers: And confequently tis not a diminution, but the true Glory of his Workmanship, that nothing is done without his continual Government and Inspection. The Notion of the World's being a great Machine, going on without the Interposition of God, as a Clock continues to go without the Assistance of a Clockmaker; is the Notion of Materialism and Fate, and tends, (under pretense of making God a * Supra-Mundane Intel - See Apligence,) to exclude Providence and God's pendix, Government in reality out of the World. No 1. And by the same Reason that a Philosopher can represent all Things going on from the beginning of the Creation, without any Government or Interpolition of Providence; a Sceptick will eafily Argue still farther Backwards.

Premiere Replique de Mr. Clarke.

la Providence y ait aucune part; il ne sera pas difficile à un Pyrrhonien de pousser ses raisonnements plus loin, & de supposer que les choses sont allées de toute éternité, comme elles vont presentement, sans qu'il soit nécessaire d'admettre une Gréation, ou un autre Auteur du Monde que ce que ces sortes de Raisonneurs appellent la Nature très-Sage 80 Eternelle. Si un Roi avoit un Royaume, où tout se passeroit, sans qu'il y intervint, & sans qu'il ordonnat de quelle maniere les choses se ferosent; ce ne seroit qu'un Royaume de nom par rapport à lui; & il ne mériteroit pas d'avoir le Titre de Roi ou de Gouverneur. Et comme on pourroit soupçonner avec raison que ceux qui prétendent, que dans un Royaume les choses peuvent aller parfaitement bien, sans que le Roi s'en mêle: comme on pourroit, dis-je, soupçonner qu'ils ne servient pas fâchez de se passer du Roi; de même, on peut dire que ceux qui soutiennent que l'Univers n'a pas besoin que Dieu le dirige & le gouverne continuellement, avancent une Doctrine qui tend à le bannir du Monde.

Sécond

Backwards, and suppose that Things have from Eternity gone on (as they now do) without any true Creation or Original Author at all, but only what fuch Arguers call All-Wise and Eternal Nature. King had a Kingdom, wherein all Things would continually go on without his Government or Interpolition, or without his Attending to and Ordering what is done therein; It would be to bim, merely a Nominal Kingdom; nor would he in reality deferve at all the Title of King or Governor. And as those Men, who pretend that in an Earthly Government Things may go on perfectly well without the King himself ordering or disposing of any Thing, may reasonably be suspected that they would like very well to fer the King aside: So whosoever contends, that the Course of the World can go on without the Continual direction of God, the Supreme Governor; his Dostrine does in Effect tend to Exclude God out of the World.

Second Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ,

o u

Réplique au prémier Ecrit Anglois.

I. ON a raison de dire dans le Papier donné à Madame la Princesse de Galles, & que son Altesse Royale m'a fait la grace de m'envoyer; qu' après les passions vitieuses, les Principes des Materialistes contribuent beaucoup à entretenir l'impieté. Mais je ne crois pas qu'on ait sujet d'adjouter, que les Principes Mathematiques de la Philosophie sont opposés à ceux des Materialistes. Au contraire, ils sont les mêmes, excepté que les Materialistes, à l'Exemple de Democrite, d'Epicure, & de Hobbes, se bornent aux seuls Principes Mathematiques, & nº admettent que des corps ; & que les Mathematiciens Chrétiens admettent encore des Substances immaterielles. Ainsi ce ne sont pas les Principes Mathematiques, (selon le sens ordinaire de ce terme, mais les Principes Metaphyfiques, qu'il faut opposer à ceux des Mate-

Mr. LEIBNITZ'S Second Paper.

BEING

An Answer to Dr. CLARKE's First
Reply.

1. T T is rightly observed in the Paper delivered to the Princess of Wales, which Her Royal Highness has been pleased to communicate to me, that, next to Corruption of Manners, the Principles of the Materialists do very much contribute to keep up Impiety. But I believe the Author had no reason to add, that the Mathematical Principles of Philosophy are opposite to these of the Materialists. On the contrary, they are the fame; only with this difference, that the Materialists, in Imitation of Democritus, Epicurus, and Hobbes, confine themselves altogether to Mathematical Principles, and admit only Bodies; whereas the Christian Mathematicians admit also Immaterial Substances. Wherefore, not Mathematical Principles (according to the usual sense of that Word) but Metaphyfical Principles ought to be opposed to those

Materialistes. Pythagore, Platon, & en partie Aristote, en ont eu quelque connoissance; mais je pretends les avoir établis Demonstrativement, quoi qu' exposés populairement, dans ma Theodicée. Ly grand Fondement des Mathematiques, est la Principe de la Contradiction, ou de l'Identité, c'est à dire, qu'une Enontiation ne suroit etre vraye & fausse en même temps; & qu' ainsi A est A, & ne sauroit être non A. Et ce seul Principe suffit pour demonstrer toute l'Arithmetique & toute la Geometrie. c'est à dire tous les Principes Mathematiques. Mais pour passer de la Mathenatique à la Physique, il faut encore un autre Principe, comme j'ay remarqué dans ma Theodicée; c'est le Principe de la Raison suffisante; c' est que rien n' arrive, sans qu'il y ait une Raison pourquoy cela soit ainsi plustot qu' autrement. C'est pourquoy Archimede en voulant passer de la Mathematique à la Physique dans son Livre de l'Equilibre, a été obligé d'employer un cas particulier du Grand Principe de la Raison suffisante. Il prend pour accordé, que s'il y a une Ballance où tout soit de même de part & d'autre, & si l'on suspend aussi des poids égaux de part & d'autre aux deux Extremités de cette Ballance, le tout demeurera en repos. C'est parce qu' il n' y a aucune Raison pourquoy un coté descende plustot que l'autre. Or par ce principe seul, savoir, qu'

of the Materialists. Pythagoras, Plato, and Aristotle in some measure, had a Knowledge of these Principles; but I pretend to have established them demonstratively in my Theodicaa, though I have done it in a popular manner. The great Foundation of Mathematicks, is the principle of Contradiction, er Identity, that is, that a Proposition cannot be true and false at the same time; and that therefore A is A, and cannot be not A. This fingle Principle is sufficient to demonstrate every part of Arithmetick and Geometry, that is, all Mathematical Principles. But in order to proceed from Mathematicks to Natural Philosophy, another Principle is requisite, as I have observed in my Theodicaa: I mean, the Principle of a sufficient Reason, viz. that nothing happens without a Reason why it should be so, rather than otherwise. And therefore Archimedes being to proceed from Mathematicks to Natural Philosophy, in his Book De Æquilibrio, was obliged to make use of a particular Case of the great Principle of a sufficient Reason. He takes it for granted, that if there be a * Balance, in which . See Apevery thing is alike on both Sides, and if pendix, equal Weights are hung on the two ends of N° 3. that Balance, the whole will be at rest. 'Tis because no Reason can be given, why one fide should weigh down, rather than the other. Now, by that fingle Principle, viz.

Sécond Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

qu'il faut qu'il y ait une Raison suffisante, pourquoy les choses sont plustoft ainsi qu'autrement, se demonstre la Divinité, & tout le reste de la Metaphysique, ou de la Theologie Naturelle; & même en quelque façon les Principes Physiques independans de la Mathematique, c'est à dire les Principes Dynamiques, ou de la Force.

2. On passe à dire que selon les Principes Mathematiques, c'est à dire selon la Philosophie de M. Newton, (car les Principes Mathematiques n' y decident rien,) la Matiere est la partie la moins considerable de l'Univers. C'est qu' il admet, outre la Matiere, un Espace vuide; & que, selon luy, la Matiere n' occupe qu' une très petite partie de l'Espace. Mais Democrite & Epicure ont soutenu la même chose, excepté qu'ils differoient en cela de M. Newton du plus au moins; & que peut être selon eux il y avoit plus de Matiere dans la monde, que selon M. Newton: En quoy je crois qu'ils étoient preferables; Car plus il y a de la Matiere, plus y a-t-il de l'occasion à Dieu d' exercer sa sagesse & sa puissance; & c'est pour cela, entre autres Raisons, que je tiens qu' il n' y a point de vuide du tout.

viz. that there ought to be a sufficient Reason why Things should be so, and not otherwife, one may demonstrate the Being of a God, and all the other Parts of Metaphyficks or Natural Theology; and even, in some Measure, those Principles of Natural Philosophy, that are independent upon Mathematicks: I mean, the + Dynamick Prin- + See Apciples, or the Principles of Force.

2. The Author proceeds, and fays, that according to the Mathematical Principles. that is, according to Sir Isaac Newton's Philosophy, (for Mathematical Principles determine nothing in the present Case.) Matter is the most inconsiderable part of the Universe. The reason is, because he admits empty Space, besides Matter; and because, according to bis Notions, Matter fills up only a very small part of Space. But Democritus and Epicurus maintained the fame Thing: They differ'd from Sir Isaac Newton, only as to the Quantity of Matter; and perhaps they believed there was more Matter in the World, than Sir Isaac Newton will allow: Wherein I think their Opinion ought to be preferred; For, the more Matter there is, the more God has occasion to exercise his Wisdom and Power. Which is one Reason, among others, why I maintain that there is no Vacuum all.

3. I

Sécond Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

- 3. Il se trouve expressement dans l'Appendice de l'Optique de M. Newton; que l'Espace est le Sensorium de Dieu. Or le mot Sensorium a toujours signissé l'Organe de la Sensation. Permis à luy & à ses amis de s'expliquer maintenant tout autrement. Je ne m'y oppose pas.
- 4. On suppose que la presence de l'Ame suffit pour qu' elle s'apperçoive de ce qui se passe dans le cerveau. Mais c'est justement ce que le Pere Mallebranche & toute l' Ecole Cartesienne nie, & a raison de nier. Il faut toute autre chose que la seule presence, pour qu' une chose represente ce qui se passe dans l'autre. Il faut pour cela quelque communication explicable; quelque maniere d'influence. L'Espace, selon M. Newton, est intimement present au corps qu'il contient, & qui est commensuré avec luy; s' ensuit il pour cela que l'Espace s'apperçoive de ce qui se passe dans le corps, & qu' il s' en souvienne après que le corps en sera sorti? Outre que l'Ame. estant indivisible, sa presence immediate qu' on pourroit s' imaginer dans le corps, ne seroit que dans un Point. Comment donc s' appercevroit elle de ce qui se fait bors de ce Point? Je pretends d'étre le premier qui ait montré, comment l'ame s' apperçoit de ce qui se passe dans le corps,

3. I find, in || express Words, in the || See the Appendix to Sir Isaac Newton's Opticks, Note, in Dr. that Space is the Sensorium of God. But First Reply, the Word Sensorium hath always signified \$ 3. the Organ of Sensation. He, and his Friends, may now, if they think sit, explain themselves quite otherwise: I shall not be against it.

4. The Author supposes that the presence of the Soul is sufficient to make it perceive what passes in the Brain. But this is the very Thing which Father Mallebranche, and all the Cartesians deny; and they rightly deny it. More is requisite besides bare presence, to enable One thing to perceive what pafses in another. Some Communication, that may be explained; some fort of influence, is requisite for this purpose. Space, according to Sir Isaac Newton, is intimately present to the Body contained in it, and commensurate with it. Does it follow from thence, that Space perceives what passes in a Body; and remembers it, when That Body is gone away? Besides, the Soul being indivisible, it's immediate presence, which may be imagined in the Body, would only be in one Point. How then could it perceive what happens out of that Point? I pretend to be the first, who has shown * * See Aphow the Soul perceives what passes in the pendix, Body,

Second Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

26

- 5. La Raison pourquoy Dieu s'apperçoit de tout, n'est pas sa simple presence, mais encore son Operation; c'est parce qu'il conserve les choses par une action qui produit continuellement ce qu'il y a de bonté & de persection en elles. Mais les ames n'ayant point d'influence immediate sur les corps, ny les corps sur les ames; leur correspondence mutuelle ne sauroit être expliquée par la Presence.
- 6. La veritable raison qui fait louër principalement une Machine, est plustost prise de l'effect de la Machine, que de sa Cause. On ne s'informe pas tant de la Puissance du Machiniste, que de son Artistice. Ainsi la raison qu'on allegue pour louër la Ma-chine de Dieu, de ce qu'il l'a faite toute entiere, sans avoir emprunté de la Matiere de dehors, n'est point suffisante. C'est un petit detour, où l'on a été forcé de recourir. Et la raison qui rend Dieu preserable à un autre Machiniste, n'est pas seulement parce qu'il fait le tout, au lieu que l'Artisan a besoin de chercher sa Matiere. Cette preference viendroit seulement de la Puissance. Mais il y a une autre raison de l'excellence de Dieu, qui vient encore de la Sagesse. C'est que sa Machine dure aussi plus long temps, & va plus juste, que celle de quelque autre Macbiniste que ce soit. Celuy qui achete la Montre, ne se soucie point

5. The Reason why God perceives every thing, is not His bare Presence, but also his Operation. 'Tis because he preserves Things by an Action, which continually produces whatever is good and perfect in them. But the Soul having * no immedipendix, ate Influence over the Body, nor the Body No. 5. over the Soul; their mutual Correspondence cannot be explained by their being present to each other.

6. The true and principal Reason why we commend a Machine, is rather grounded upon the Effects of the Machine, than upon its Cause. We don't enquire much about the Power of the Artist, as we do about his Skill in his Workmanship. And therefore the Reason alledged by the Author for extolling the Machine of God's making, grounded upon his having made it entirely, without wanting any Materials to make it of; That Reason, I say, is not sufficient. 'Tis a mere Shift the Author has been forced to have recourse to: And the Reason why God exceeds any other Artist, is not only because he makes the Whole, whereas all other Artists must have Matter to work upon. This Excellency in God, would be only on the account of Power. But God's Excellency arises also from another Cause, viz. Wisdom: whereby his Machine lasts longer, and moves more regularly, than those of any other Artist whatfoever. He who buys a Watch, does

si l'Ouvrier l'a faite toute entiere, ou s'il en a fait faire les pieces par d'autres Ouvriers, & les a seulement ajustes; pourveu qu'elle aille comme il faut. Et si l'Ouvrier avoit receu de Dieu le don jusqu'à créer la Matiere des roües, on n'en seroit point content, s'il n'avoit receu aussi le don de les bien ajuster. Et de même, celuy qui voudra être content de l'ouvrage de Dieu, ne le sera point par la seule raison qu'on nous allegue.

- 7. Ainsi il faut que l'artissice de Dieu, ne soit point inserieur à celuy d'un Ouvrier; il faut même qu'il aille insiniment au delà. La simple Production de tout, marqueroit bien la Puissance de Dieu; mais elle ne marqueroit point assez sa Sagesse. Ceux qui soutiendront le contraire, tomberont justement dans le defaut de Materialistes & de Spinoza, dont ils protestent de s'éloigner: Ils reconnoitroient de la Puissance, mais non pas assez de Sagesse dans le Principe des choses.
- 8. Je ne dis point que le Monde corporel est une Machine ou Montre qui va sans l'interposition de Dieu, & je presse assés que les Creatures ont besoin de son influence continuelle: Mais je soutiens que c'est une Montre

not mind whether the Workman made every Part of it bimself, or whether he got the several Parts made by Others, and did only put them together; provided the Watch goes right. And if the Workman had received from God even the Gist of creating the Matter of the Wheels; yet the Buyer of the Watch would not be satisfied, unless the Workman had also received the Gist of putting them well together. In like manner, he who will be pleased with God's Workmanship, cannot be so, without some other Reason than that which the Author has here alleged.

7. Thus the Skill of God must not be inferior to that of a Workman; nay, it must go infinitely beyond it. The bare Production of every thing, would indeed show the Power of God; but it would not sufficiently show his Wisdom. They who maintain the contrary, will fall exactly into the Error of the Materialists, and of Spinoza, from whom they profess to differ. They would, in such case, acknowledge Power, but not sufficient Wisdom, in the Principle or Cause of all

Things.

8. I do not say, the Material World is a Machine, or Watch, that goes without God's Interposition; and I have sufficiently insisted, that the Creation wants to be continually influenc'd by its Creator. But

Sécond Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

30.

Montre qui va sans avoir besoin de sa Correction: Autrement il faudroit dire que Dieu se ravise. Dieu a tout prevû, il a remedié à tout par avance: Il y a dans ses ouvrages une barmonie, une beauté dejà préétablie.

9. Ce Sentiment n'exclut point la Providence ou le Gouvernment de Dieu: Au contraire, cela le rend parfait. Une veritable Providence de Dieu, demande une parfaite Prevoyance: Mais de plus elle demande aussi, non seulement qu'il ait tout preveu, mais aussi qu'il ait pourveu à tout par des remedes convenables préordonnés: Autrement il manquera ou de Sagesse pour le prevoir, ou de Puissance pour y pourvoir. Il resemblera à un Dieu Socinien, qui vit du jour à la journée, comme disoit M. Jurieu. Il est vray que Dieu, selon les Sociniens, manque même de prevoir les inconveniens; au lieu que, selon ces Messieurs qui l'obligent à se corriger, il manque d'y pourvoir. Mais il me semble que c'est en-core un manquement bien grand; il faudroit qu'il manquât de Pouvoir, ou de bonne Volonté.

I maintain it to be a Watch, that goes without wanting to be Mended by him: Otherwise we must say, that God betbinks bimself again. No; God has foreseen every thing; He has provided a Remedy for every thing before hand; There is in his Works a Harmony, a Beauty, already pre-

established.

9. This Opinion does not exclude God's Providence, or his Government of the World: On the contrary, it makes it perfest. A true Providence of God, requires a perfect Foresight. But then it requires moreover, not only that he should have foreseen every thing; but also that he should have provided for every thing before-band, with proper Remedies: Otherwise, he must want either Wisdom to foresee Things, or Power to provide against them. He will be like the God of the Socinians, who lives only from day to day, as Mr. Jurieu says. Indeed God, according to the Socinians, does not so much as foresee Inconveniences; whereas, the Gentlemen I am arguing with, who put him upon Mending his Work, fay only, that he does not provide against them. But this feems to me to be still a very great Imperfection. According to This Doctrine, God must want either Power, or Good Will.

prendre avec raison, d'avoir dit que Dieu est Intelligentia supramundana. Diront-ils qu'il est Intelligentia Mundana, c'est à dire qu'il est l'Ame du Monde? J'espere que non. Cependant ils seront bien de se garder d'y donner sans y penser.

11. La Comparaison d'un Roy, où tout iroit sans qu'il s'en melât, ne vient point à propos; puisque Dieu conserve tousjours les choses, & qu'elles ne sauroient subsisser sans lui: Ainsi son Royaume n'est point nominal. C'est justement comme si l'on disoit, qu'un Roy qui auroit si bien fait élever ses Sujets, & les maintiendroit si bien dans leur capacité & bonne volonté, par le soin qu'il

auroit pris de leur subsistence, qu'il n'auroit

point besoin de les redresser; seroit seulement un Roy de nom.

12. Enfin, si Dieu est obligé de corriger les choses naturelles de temps en temps, il faut que cela se fasse ou surnaturellement ou naturellement. Si cela se fait surnaturellement, il faut recourir au Miracle pour expliquer les choses naturelles; ce qui est en esset une reduction d'un hypothese ad absurdum.

10. I don't think I can be rightly * See Apblamed, for saying that God is * Intelli- pendix, gentia supramundana. Will they say, that No, 1. he is Intelligentia Mundana; that is, the Soul of the World? I hope not, However, they will do well to take care, not to fall into that Notion unawares.

11. The Comparison of a King, under whose Reign every thing should go on without his Interpolition, is by no means to the present Purpose; since God preferves every thing continually, and nothing can subsist without him. His Kingdom therefore is not a Nominal one. iust as if one should say, that a King, who should originally have taken care to have his Subjects fo well educated, and should, by his Care in providing for their Sublistence, preserve them so well in their Fitness for their several Stations, and in their good Affection towards him, as that he should have no Occasion ever to be amending any thing amongst them; would be only a Nominal King.

12. To conclude. If God is oblig'd to mend the Course of Nature from time to time. it must be done either supernaturally or naturally. If it be done fupernaturally, we must have recourse to † Miracles, in † See Aporder to explain Natural Things: Which pendix, is reducing an Hypothesis ad absurdum:

Sécond Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

34

dum. Car avec les Miracles, on peut rendre raison de tout sans peine. Mais si cela se fait naturellement, Dieu ne sera point Intelligentia supramundana; il sera compris sous la nature des choses, c'est à dire il sera l'Ame du Monde.



Sécond

Mr. LEIBNITZ's Second Paper.

35

For, every thing may easily be accounted for by Miracles. But if it be done naturally, then God will not be * Intelligentia * See Appendix, Supramundana: He will be comprehended No. 1. under the Nature of Things; that is, He will be the Soul of the World.



.



Séconde Replique de Mr. CLARKE,

1. L'Ors que j'ai dit que les Principes Ma-thematiques de la Philosophie sont contraires à ceux des Materialistes, j'ai voulu dire, qu'au lieu que les Materialistes supposent que la Structure de l'Univers peut avoir été produite par les Seuls Principes Mechaniques, de la Matiere & du Mouvement, de la Nécessité & de la Fatalité; les Principes Mathématiques de la Philosophie font voir au contraire, que l'Etat des choses [la Constitution du Soleil & des Planetes] n'a pu être produit que par une Cause intelligente & libre. A l'égard du mot de Mathematique ou de Metaphysique, on peut appeller, si on le juge à propos, les Principes Mathematiques, des Principes Metaphysiques, selon que les Consequences Metaphysiques naissent démonstrativement des Principes Mathematiques. Il est vrai que rien n'existe, sans une Raison suffisante; O que rien n'existe d'une certaine maniere, phitôt que d'une autre, sans qu'il y ait aussi une Raison suffisante pour cela; O par conséquent, lors qu'il n'y a aucune cause, il ne peut y avoir aucun Effet. Mais cette Rai-

Dr. CLARKE's Second Reply.

7 Hen I said that the Mathematical Principles of Philosophy are oppolite to those of the Materialists; the Meaning was, that whereas Materialists suppose the Frame of Nature to be such, as could have arisen from mere Mechanical Principles of Matter and Motion, of Necessity and Fate; the Mathematical Principles of Philosophy show on the contrary, that the State of Things [the Constitution of the Sun and Planets 7 is such as could not arise from any thing but an Intelligent and Free Cause. As to the Propriety of the Name; so far as Metaphysical Consequences follow demonstratively from Mathematical Principles, so far the Mathematical Principles may (if it be thought fit) be called Metaphysical Principles. 'Tis very true, that nothing is, without a sufficient Reason why it is, and why it is thus rather than otherwise. And therefore, where there is no Cause, there can be no Effect. But this sufficient Reason is oft-

son suffisante, est souvent la simple Volonté Par exemple; si l'on considere pourquoi une certaine Portion ou Systeme de Matiere a été créée dans un certain lieu, & une autre dans un autre certain lieu, puisque tout lieu etant absolument indifferent à toute Matiere, c'eut été précisément la même chose vice versa, supposé que les deux Portions de Matiere Sou leurs Particules,] soient semblables; st, dis-je, l'on considere cela, on n'en peut alleguer d'autre raison, que la simple Volonté de Dieu. si cette Volonté * ne pouvoit jamais agir, sans être prédeterminée par quelque cause, comme une Balance ne sçauroit se mouvoir, Sans le poids qui la fait pencher; Dieu n'auroit pas la liberté de choisir; &

seroit introduire la Fatalité.

2. Pluseurs anciens Philosophes Grecs, qui avoient emprunté leur Philosophie des Pheniciens, & dont la doctrine fut corrompue par Epicure, admettoient en général la Matiere & le Vuide. Mais ils ne sçurent pas se servir de ces Principes, pour expliquer les Phénomènes de la Nature par le moyen des Mathematiques. Quelque petite que soit la Quantité de la Matiere, Dien ne manque pas de Sujets, sur lesquels il puisse exercer sa sugesse outre la Matiere, qui sont également des Sujets, sur lesquels Dieu exerce sa puissance & sa sagesse. On auroit

*Voïez l Appendice, N°. 4.

times no other, than the mere Will of God. For instance; Why This particular System of Matter, should be created in one particular Place, and That in another particular Place; when, (all Place being absolutely indifferent to all Matter,) it would have been exactly the same thing vice versa, fuppoling the two Systems [or the Particles of Matter to be alike; there can be no other Reason, but the mere Will of God. Which if it * could in No Case act without pendix, a predetermining Cause, any more than a No. 4. Balance can move without a preponderating Weight; this would tend to take away all Power of Chusing, and to introduce Fatality.

2. Many Ancient Greeks, who had their Philosophy from the Phanicians, and whose Philosophy was corrupted by Epicurus, held indeed in general Matter and Vacuum; but they knew not how to apply those Principles by Mathematicks, to the Explication of the Phanomena of Nature. How Small soever the Quantity of Matter be. God has not at all the less Subject to exercise his Wisdom and Power upon: For, Other Things, as well as Matter, are equally Subjects, on which God exercises his Power and Wisdom. By the fame

Séconde Replique de Mr. Clarke.

40

auroit pu prouver par la même raison, que les Hommes, ou toute autre Espece de Creatures, doivent être infinis en nombre, afin que Dieu ne manque pas de Sujets pour exercer sa Puissance & sa Sagesse.

3. Le Mot de Sensorium ne signifie pas proprement l'Organe, mais le Lieu de la Sensation. L'Oeil, l'Oreille, &c. sont des Organes; mais ce ne sont pas des Sensoria. D'ailleurs, Mr. le Chevalier Newton † ne dit pas, que l'Espace est un Sensorium; mais qu'il est, (par voye de Comparaison,)

pour ainsi dire le Sensorium, &c.

4. On n'a jamais supposé que la Presence de l'Ame suffit pour la Perception: On a dit seulement que cette Presence est nécessaire afin que l'Ame apperçoive. Si l'Ame n'étoit pas presente aux Images des Choses, qui sont apperçues, elle ne pourroit pas les appercevoir: Mais sa Presence ne suffit pas, à moins qu'elle ne soit aussi une Substance vivante. Les Substances inanimées, quoique presentes, n'apperçoivent rien: Et une Substance vivante n'est capable de Perception, que dans le Lieu où elle est presente; soit aux choses mêmes, comme Dieu est present à tout l'Univers; soit aux Images des choses, comme l'Ame leur est presente dans son Sensorium. Il est impossible qu'une chose

^{· †} Voïez la Note dans ma prémière Réplique, 5. 3. agille,

fame Argument it might just as well have been proved, that *Men*, or any other particular Species of Beings, must be *infinite* in *Number*, least God should want Subjects, on which to exercise his Power and Wisdom.

3. The Word Senfory does not properly fignify the Organ, but the Place of Senfation. The Eye, the Ear, &c. are Organs, but not Senforia. Besides, Sir Isaac Newton † does not say, that Space is the Sensory; but that it is, by way of Similitude only, as it were the Sensory, &c.

4. It was never supposed, that the Presence of the Soul was sufficient, but only
that it is necessary in order to Perception.
Without being present to the Images of the
Things perceived, it could not possibly perceive them: But being present is not sufficient, without it be also a Living Substance.
Any inanimate Substance, the present, perceives nothing: And a Living Substance
can only there perceive, where it is present
either to the Things themselves, (as the
Omnipresent God is to the whole Universe;) or to the Images of Things, (as
the Soul of Man is in its proper Sensory.)
Nothing can any more Act, or be Acted

[†] See the Note in my First Reply, S. 3.

42 Séconde Replique de Mr. Clarke.

agisse, ou que quelque Sujet agisse sur elle, dans un lieu où elle n'est pas presente; comme il est impossible qu'elle soit dans un lieu, où elle n'est pas.

Quoique l'Ame soit indivisible, il ne s'ensuit pas qu'elle n'est presente que dans un seul Point. L'Espace, sini ou insini, est absolument indivisible, même par la pensée; car on ne peut s'imaginer que ses parties se separent l'une de l'autre, sans s'imaginer qu'elles * sortent, pour ainsi dire, hors d'elles mêmes; & cependant l'Espace n'est pas un simple Point.

fimple Presence, ni parce qu'il agit sur elles; mais parce qu'il est, non seulement present par tout, mais encore un Etre Vivant & Intelligent. On doit dire la même chose de l'Ame, dans sa petite Sphere. Ce n'est point par sa simple Presence, mais parce qu'elle est une Substance vivante, qu'elle apperçoit les sinages auxquelles elle est presente, & qu'elle ne sçauroit appercevoir sans

leur être presente.

6 & 7. Il est vrai, que l'Excellence de l'Ouvrage de Dieu ne consiste pas seulement en ce que cet Ouvrage fait voir la Puissance de sim Auteur, mais encore en ce qu'il mon-

^{*} Ut partium Temporis Ordo est immutabilis, sic etiam Ordo partium Spatij. Moveantur hæ de locis suis, & movebuntur (ut ita dicam) de Seipsis. Newton. Princip. Schol. ad Desin. 8.

upon, where it is not present; than it can Be, where it is not. The Soul's being Indivisible, does not prove it to be present only in a mere Point. Space, finite or infinite, is absolutely indivisible, even so much as in Thought; (To imagine its Parts moved from each other, is to imagine them * moved out of themselves;) and yet Space is not a mere Point.

5. God perceives Things, not indeed by his simple Presence to them, nor yet by his Operation upon them, but by his being a Living and Intelligent, as well as an Omnipresent Substance. The Soul likewise, (within its narrow Sphere,) not by its simple Presence, but by its being a Living Substance, perceives the Images to which it is present; and which, without being present to them, it could not perceive.

6&7. Tis very true, that the Excellency of God's Workmanship does not consist in its showing the *Power* only, but in its showing the *Wisdom also* of its Author.

^{*} Ut partium Temporis Ordo est immutabilis, sic etiam Ordo partium Spatis. Moveantur hæ de locis suis, & movebuntur (ut ita dicam) de Seipsis. Newton. Principia, Schol. ad Desin. 8.

tre sa Sagesse. Mais Dieu ne fait pas paroitre cette Sagesse, en rendant la Nature capable de se mouvoir sans lui, comme un Horloger fait mouvoir une Horloge. Cela est impossible, puis qu' il n' y a point de Forces dans la Nature, qui soient indépendantes de Dieu, comme les Forces des Poids & des Ressorts sont indépendantes des hommes. La Sagesse de Dieu consiste donc en ce qu' il a formé dès le commencement une Idée parfaite & complete d'un Ouvrage, qui a commencé & qui subsiste toûjours, conformément à cette Idée, par l'exercice perpetuel de la puissance & du Gouvernment de son Auteur.

8. Le mot de Correction, ou de Réforme, ne doit pas être entendu par rapport à Dieu; mais uniquement par rapport à Nous. L'Etat present du système Solaire, (par exemple,) selon les Loix du mouvement qui sont maintenant établies, tombera un jour * en confusion; & ensuite il sera peut être redressé, ou bien il recevra une nouvelle forme. Mais ce changement n'est que relatif, par rapport à notre maniere de concevoir les choses. L'Etat present du Monde, le desordre où il tombera, & le Rénouvellement dont ce desordre sera suivi, entrent également dans

.1

^{*} Voïez la Note sur le prémier Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz, § 4.

But then this Wisdom of God appears, not in making Nature (as an Artificer makes a Clock) capable of going on Without bim: (For that's impossible; there being no Powers of Nature independent upon God, as the Powers of Weights and Springs are independent upon Men:) But the Wisdom of God consists, in framing Originally the perfect and complete Idea of a Work, which begun and continues, according to that Original perfect Idea, by the Continual Uninterrupted Exercise of his Power and Government.

8. The Word Correction, or Amendment, is to be understood, not with regard to God, but to Us only. The present Frame of the Solar System (for instance,) according to the present Laws of Motion, will in time * fall into Confusion; and perhaps, after That, will be amended or put into a new Form. But this Amendment is only relative, with regard to Our Conceptions. In reality, and with regard to God; the present Frame, and the consequent Disorder, and the following Renovation, are all equally parts of the Design framed in Gods Original

F See the Note on Mr. Leibnitz's First Paper. § 4.

le dessein que Dieu a formé. Il en est de la Formation du Monde, comme de celle du Corps Humain: La Sagesse de Dieu ne consiste pas à les rendre éternels, mais à les faire durer aussi long temps qu' il le juge à

propos.

9. La Sagesse & la || Préscience de Dieu ne consistent pas à préparer des remedes par avance, qui gueriront d'eux mêmes les desordres de la Nature. Car, à proprement parler, il n'arrive aucun desordre dans le Monde, par rapport à Dieu; & par conséquent, il n'y a point de Remedes, il n'y a

† Voïcz point même de Forces naturelles, qui † puisl'Appen-sent agir d'elles mêmes, comme les Poids & dicc, N°2 les Ressorts agissent d'eux mêmes par rapport aux bommes. Mais la Sagesse & la Présiènce de Dieu consistent, comme on l'a dit ci-dessus, à former dès le commencement un dessein, que sa puissance met continuellement en execution.

* Voyez l'Appendice, N°1.

10. Dieu n' est point une Intelligentia Mundana, ni une Intelligentia * Supramundana, mais une Intelligence qui est par tout, dans le Monde, & bors du Monde. Il est en tout, par tout, & par dessus tout.

^{||} Voiez mes Discours sur l'Existence de Dieu, la Verité de la Réligion Naturelle, Gr. Part I. Pag. 106. quatrième Edition.

perfect Idea. 'Tis in the Frame of the World, as in the Frame of Mans Rody: The Wisdom of God does not consist, in making the present Frame of Either of them Eternal, but to last so long as be thought fit.

9. The Wisdom and || Foresight of God, do not confist in providing originally Remedies, which shall of themselves cure the Disorders of Nature. For in Truth and Strictness, with regard to God, there are No. Diforders, and consequently no Remedies, and indeed no Powers of Nature at all, that + can do any Thing of themselves, + See Ap-(as Weights and Springs Work of themselves pendix, No. 2. with regard to Men:) But the Wisdom and Forefight of God, confift (as has been faid) in contriving at once, what his Power and Government is Continually putting in actual Execution.

10. God is neither a Mundane Intelligence, nor a * Supra-Mundane Intelli- * See Ap-gence; but an Omnipresent Intelligence, No 1. both In and Without the World. He is In all, and Through all, as well as Above all.

[|] See my Sermons preach'd at Mr. Boyles Leaure. Part I. Page 106. Fourth Edition.

11. Quand on dit que Dieu conserve les choses; si l'on veut dire par là, qu'il agit actuellement sur elles, o qu'il les gouverne, en conservant & en continuant leurs Etres, leurs Forces, leurs Arrangemens, & leurs Mouvemens; c'est precisément ce que je soutiens. Mais si l' on veut dire simplement, que Dieu en conservant les choses ressemble à un Roi, qui crééroit des Sujets, lesquels seroient capables d'agir, sans qu'il eut aucune part à ce qui se passeroit parmi eux; si c'est-là, dis-je, ce que l'on veut dire, Dieu sera un véritable Createur, mais il

n' aura que le Titre de Gouverneur.

12. Le raisonnement que l'on trouve ici, suppose que tout ce que Dieu fait, est Surnaturel ou Miraculeux; & par consequent, il tend à excluire Dieu du Gouvernement actuel du Monde. Mais il est certain que le Naturel & le Surnaturel ne different en rien l'un de l'autre par rapport à Dieu: Ce ne sont que des Distinctions, selon nôtre maniere de concevoir les choses. Donner un mouvement réglé au Soleil (ou à la Terre,) c' est une chose que nous appellons Naturelle: Arrêter ce mouvement pendant un jour, c' est une chose Surnaturelle selon nos idées. Mais la derniere de ces deux choses n'est pas l'effet d'une plus grande puissance que l'autre; & par rapport à Dieu, elles sont toutes deux egalement Naturelles ou Surnaturelles

means his actual Operation and Government, in preserving and continuing the Beings, Powers, Orders, Dispositions and Motions of all Things; this is all that is contended for. But if his conferring Things, means no more than a King's creating such Subjects, as shall be able to act well enough without his intermeddling or Ordering any thing amongst them ever after; This is making him indeed a real Creator, but a Governour only Nominal.

12. The Argument in this Paragraph supposes, that whatsoever God does, is Supernatural or Miraculous; and consequently it tends to exclude All Operation of God in the Governing and Ordering of the Natural World. But the Truth is; Natural and Supernatural are nothing at all different with regard to God, but distinctions merely in Our Conceptions of things. cause the Sun [or Earth] to move regularly, is a thing we call Natural: To flop its Motion for a Day, we call Supernatural: But the One is the Effect of no greater Power, than the Other; nor is the One; with respect to God, more or less Natural or Supernatural than the other. God's being

turelles. Quoique Dieu soit present dans tout l'Univers, il ne s'ensuit point qu'il soit * l'Ame du Monde. L'Ame bumaine est une partie d'un Composé, dont le Corps est l'autre partie; & ces deux parties agissent mutuellement l'une sur l'autre, comme étant les parties d'un même Tout. Mais Dieu est dans le Monde, non comme une partie de l'Univers, mais comme une Gouverneur; Il agit sur tout, & rien n'agit sur lui. Il n'est pas loin de chacun de nous:

^{*} Deus emnia regit, &c. Dieu gouverne tout, non comme une Ame du Monde, mais comme le Seigneur de P Univers. Le mot de Dieu est Rélatif: Il emporte une idée de Rélation à des Serviteurs; & la Divinité de Dieu, est sa Domination, qui ne ressemble pas à celle de l'Ame fur son propre corps, mais à celle d'un Seigneur ou d'un Maitre sur ses Serviteurs. ____ Tout Subsiste & se meut en Dieu; mais sans aucune passion mutuelle. Dien n'est en aucune manière affecté par le mouvement des corps; & le mouvement des corps n'est point interrompu par la presence de Dieu. __ Dieu n'a ni Corps, ni figure corporelle: c'est pourquoi on ne scauroit le voir, l'entendre, mi le toucher; & il ne doit être adoré sous la ressent blance d' aucune chose corporeile. Nous avons des Idées de les Attributs; mais les Substances des Etres, sans aucune exception, nous font entierement inconnues. Nous ne sentions même connoitre les Substances des Corps ni par quelqu'un de nos Sens, in par quelque Alle réflechi de notre Esprit. La Substance de Dieu nous est encore moins connue. Nous ne le connoissons que par les proprieter & Ics Attributs, par son excellente & tres Sage disposition des choses, & par les Causes Finales: Et nous l' adorons, & le servons, à cause de sa Domination. Car un

being present in or To the World, does not make him to be the * Soul of the World. A Soul, is part of a Compound, whereof Body is the Other part; and they mutually Affect each other, as parts of the same whole. But God is present to the World, not as a Part, but as a Governor; Acting upon all Things, himself acted upon by nothing.

^{*} Hic [Deus] omnia regit, non ut Anima Mundi, sed ut universorum Dominus. ____ Deus est vox relativa, & ad Servos refertur; & Deiton est Dominatio Dei, non in corpus proprium, sed in Serves. ____ In ipso continentur & moventur universa, sed absq; mutua passione. Deus nihil patitur ex corporum Motibus; illa nullam sentiunt resistentiam ex Omnipræsentia Dei. ____ Corpore omni & figura corporeà prorsus destituirur; ideoq; videri non potest, nec audiri, nec tangi, nec sub specie rei alicujus corporei coli debet. Ideas habemus Attributorum ejus; sed quid sit rei alicujus Substantia, minime cognoscimus. Intimas [corporum] Substantias nullo Sensu, nulla actione reflexa cognoscimus, & multo minus Ideam habemus Substantiæ Dei. Hunc cognoscimus solummodò per Proprietates suas & Attributa, & per sapientissimas & optimas rerum structuras, &; causas finales; veneramur autem & colimus ob dominium. Deus enim fine Dominio. Providentia, & Causis Finasibus, nihil aliud est quam Fatum & Natura. i.e. God Governs all Things, not as a Soul of the World, but as the Lord of the Universe. - God, is a relative Word, carrying in it the notion of Relation to Servanes. And the Godhead of God, ic His Dominion: A Dominion, not like that of a Soul over its own Body, but that of a Lord over his Servants. In Him all Things subsist and move, but without a mutual affelling of each other, [such as is between Soul and Body.] God is no way affected by the Motions of Bodies; and the Motion of Bodies meets with no Obstruction from the Omnipresence of God. He is altogether without Body or Budily Shape; and therefore can neither be Seen, nor Heard,

52 Seconde Replique de Mr. Clarke.

nous; car en lui nous (& toutes les choses qui existent) avons la vie, le mouvement, & l'être.

Dieu sans Domination, sans Providence & fans Causes Finales, n'est autre chose que le Destin & la Nature. Newtoni Principia, Scholium generale sub finem.

**** *** ***

Troisiéme

nothing. He is not far from every one of Us, for in him We (and all Things) live and move and have our Beings.

E 3 1

Troisième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz;

o u

Réponse au Sécond Ecrit Anglois.

1. CElon la maniere de parler ordinaire, les Principes Mathematiques font ceux qui consistent dans les Mathematiques pures, comme Nombres, Figures, Arithmetique. Geometrie. Mais les Principes Metaphysiques regardent des notions plus gene-

rales, comme la Cause & l' Effett.

2. On m'accorde ce Principe important, que rien n'arrive sans qu'il y ait une raison suffisante, pourquoy il en soit plûtôt ainsi qu' autrement. Mais on me l' accorde en paroles, & on me le refuse en Effect. Ce qui fait voir qu' on n' en a pas bien compris toute la force. Et pour cela on se sert d' une instance qui tombe justement dans une de mes demonstrations contre l' Espace réel absolu, Idole de quelques Anglois Mo-Je dis, Idole, non pas dans un sens Theologique, mais Philosophique; comme

Mr. LEIBNITZ'S Third Paper.

BEING

An Answer to Dr. CLARKE's Second Reply.

1. A Coording to the usual way of Speaking, Mathematical Principles concern only mere Mathematicks, viz. Numbers, Figures, Arithmetick, Geometry. But Metaphysical Principles. concern more general Notions, such as are Cause and Effect.

2. The Author grants me this important Principle; that Nothing happens without a sufficient reason, why it should be So, rather than otherwise. But he grants it only in Words, and in reality denies it. Which shows that he does not fully perceive the Strength of it. And therefore he makes use of an Instance, which exactly falls in with one of my Demonstrations against real absolute Space, which is an Idol of some Modern Englishmen. I call it an Idol, not in a Theological Sense, but in a Philosophical

Troisième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

56

me le Chancelier Bacon disoit autres sois, qu'il y a Idola Tribûs, Idola Specûs.

3. Ces Messeurs soutiennent donc, que l'Espace est un Etre réel absolu; mais cela les mane, à de grandes dissicultés. Car il paroist que cet Etre doit être eternel co infini. C'est pourquoy il y en a qui ont cra que c'estoit Dieu lui même, ou bien son Attribut, son Immensiré. Mais comma il a des parties, ce n'est pas une chose qui puisse convenir à Dieu.

A. Pour moy, j'ay marqué plus d'une fois; que je tenois d'Blpace pour quelque chofe de purement relatif, somme le Temps; pour an Ordre des Coexillednes, comme le Temps est un Ordre des Suciessions. Car l'Espace marque en termes de possibilité, un Ordre des oboser qui existent en mêma temps, en tant qu'elles existent ensemble; sans entrer dans leur paquieres d'axister re Et lors qu'ion voit pluseurs rhoses ensemble, on il appençait de ret Ordre des choses entre elles.

piennent l'Espace pour sons Schistaines, du chi moiss pour quelque. Etre absolur, j'ay plusseur Demonstrations. Main janièveux nu service de presence que du celle dans on me sonnit son l'occosion. Fe dissional represent plusseur plusseur de dissional representation de l'Espace éthic de Erms absolu pris arrivarait quelque chose dans la ferait impossible qu'il

sophinal one in As Chandellor Bason says, that there are Idola Tribus, Idola Species.

that Space is a real absolute Being. But this involves them it great Difficulties; For such a Being must needs be Eternal and Instite. Hence Some have believed it to be God bimself, or, one of his Attributes, his Immensity. But since Space consists of Parts, it is not a thing which can belong to God.

As for my Own Opinion, I have faid prove than once, that I hold Space to be famething merely relative, as Time is; that I hold it to be an Order of Coexistences, as Time is an Order of Successions. For Space denotes, in Terms of Polibility, an Order of Things which exist at the same time, considered as axisting together; without anquiring into their Manner of Existing. And when many Things are seen together, one pierceives That Order of Things among themselves.

factor the Fancy of Those who take Space to be a Subflance, or at least an absolute Barrige. But I shall only use, at the present, one Demonstration, which the Author here gives me Occasion to insist upon. I say then, that if Space was an absolute Being, there would Something happen, for which

y eut une raison suffisante; ce qui est contre notre Axiome. Voicy comment je le prouve. L'Espace est quelque chose d'uni-forme absolument; & fans les choses y placées, un point de l'Espace ne differe absolument en rien d'un autre point de l'Espace. Or il suit de cela (supposé que l'Espace soit quelque chose en lui même outre l'ordre des corps entre eux,) qu'il est impossible qu'il y ait une raison, pourquoy Dieu, gardant les mêmes situations des corps entre eux; ait place les corps dans l'Espace ainsi & non pas autrement; & pourquoy tout n'a pas été pris à rebours, (par exemple,) par un Echange de l'Orient & de l'Occident. Mais si l'Espace n'est autre chose que cet Ordre ou Rapport, & n'est rien du tout sans les corps, que la possibilité d'en mettre; ces deux Etats, l'un tel qu'il est, l'autre supposé à rebours, ne differeroient point entre eux. Leur Difference ne se trouve donc, que dans notre Supposition chimerique, de la realité de Mais dans la verité. l'Espace en lui même. l'un feroit justement la même chose que l'autre, comme ils sont absolument indiscernables; & par consequent, il n'y a pas lieu de demander la raison de la preserence de l'un à l'autre.

which it * would be impossible there should * See 4-be a fufficient Reason. Which is against No. 4. my Axiom. And I prove it thus. Space is Something absolutely Uniform; and, without the Things placed in it, One Point of Space does not absolutely differ in any respect what sever from Another Point of Space. Now from hence it follows, (Supposing Space to be Something in it felf, befides the Order of Bodies among themselves,) that tis impossible there should be a Reason, why God, preserving the same Situations of Bodies among themselves, should have placed them in Space after one certain particular manner, and not otherwise; why every thing was not placed the quite contrary way, for instance, by changing East into West. But if Space is nothing else, but That Order or Relation; and is nothing at all without Bodies, but the Possibility of placing them; then those two States, the one such as it now is, the other supposed to be the quite contrary way, would not at all differ from one another. Their Difference therefore is only to be found in our Chimerical Supposition of the Reality of Space in it felf. But in truth the one would exactly be the same thing as the other, they being absolutely indifcernible; and consequently there is no room to enquire after a Reason of the Preference of the one to the other as the same as a second

6. Il en est de même du Temps. Suppasé que quelqu' un demande pourque Died n'a pas sout créé un An plûtôt; & que ce meme personnage veuille inferer de là: que Dieu)a, fait quelque chose dont: il n'est pos possible qu'il y ait une raison pourque il l'a fait ainsi platot qu'autrement. On hai repondroit que son illation seroit vraye, si le temps étoit quelque chose bors des choses comporelles; Car il seroit impossible qu'il) eut des raisons pourquoy les choses eussent été appliquées plutôt à de tels instans, qu'à d'autres, deur fuccession demeurant la même. Mais cela même prouve que les instans bors des choses ne sont rien, & qu'ils ne conse Rent que dans leur pritre successif ; lequeb demeurant le mome, l'un des deux Etats. comme celup de l'anticipative imaginée, ne differerbio en rien, & ne fauroit être discerné de l'autre qu'i est maintenant. Formagnit I timiliza

dire, qua mon Axiome n'a pas été hien pris; de dire, qua mon Axiome n'a pas été hien pris; dir qu'en semblant l'accorder, on le resuse. Il est vray, dit ou, qu'il n'y a tien sans une raison sussissante pourquoy il est; & pourquoy il est ainsi plissor qu' autrement d'Asis an adjunte, que vette raison sussissante est seuveno aussimple [ou mere] V chouse de Dieu: Comme lors qu'on demande pourquoy.

"6. The Case is the same with respect to Time. Supposing any one should ask, why God did not create every thing a Year fooner; and the same Person should infer from thence, that God has done something. concerning which itis not possible there should be a Reason, why he did it so, and not atherwise: The Answer is. That his Inference would be right, if Time was any thing distinct from Things existing in Time. For it would be impeffible there should be any Reason, why. Things should be applied to such particular Infants, rather than to others, their Succession continuing the same. But then the same Argument proves, that Instants, confider'd without the Things, are Nothing at all; and that they consist only in the successive Order of Things: Which Order remaining the fame, one of the two States, wis. that of a supposed Anticipation, would not at all differ, nor could be discerned from the other which Now is.

that my Axiom has not been well underfrood; and that the Author denies it, tho
he feems to grant it. This true, fays he,
that there is nothing without a fufficient.
Reafon why it Is, and why it is Thue, rather than otherwise. But he adds, that
This sufficient Reafon, is often the simple on
mere Will of God: As, when it is asked
why

63 Troisieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

la Matiere n'a pas été placée autrement dans l'Espace; les mêmes sauations entre les corps demeurant gardées. Mais c'est justement soutenir que Dieu veut quelque chose, sans qu'il y ait aucune raison sussifiante de sa Volonté; contre l'Axiome, ou la Regle generale de tout ce qui arrive. C'est retomber dans l'Indisference vague; que j'ay amplement resutée, & que j'ay montrée chimerique absolument, même dans les Creatures; & contraire à la Sagesse de Dieu, comme s'il pouvoit aperer sans agir par raison.

8. On m'objecte qu' en n'admettant point cette simple [& mere] Volonté, co servis ôten à Dieu le pouvoir de chuisir, & tomban dans la Fatalité. Mais c'est tout le contraire : On soutient en Dieu le pouvoir de choisir, puisqu' on le fonde sur la raison du choix conforme à sa Sagesse. Et ce n'est pas cette Fatalité (qui n'est autre choses que l'ordre le plus sage de la Providence,); mais une Fatalité ou Necessate brute, qu'il saut eviter; où il n'y a ny Sagesse; ny Choix.

9. J'avois remarqué, qu'en diminuant la Quantité de la Matiere; on diminue la quantité des Objets où Dieu peut exercer sa Bonté. On me repend, qu'au lieu de la Matiere, il y a d'autres choses dans le vuide; où il ne laisse pas de l'exercer. Soit. Quoique

1:

why Matter was not placed otherwhere in Space; the same Situations of Bodies among themselves being preserved. But this is plainly maintaining, that God Wills Something, without any sufficient Reason for his Will: Against the Axiom, or the general Rule of whatever happens. This is falling back into the loose Indifference, which I have consuted at large, and showed to be absolutely chimerical even in Creatures, and contrary to the Wisdom of God, as if he could operate without acting by Reason.

8. The Author objects against me, that if we don't admit this simple and mere Will, we take away from God the Power of Chusing, and bring in a Fatality. But the quite contrary is true. I maintain that God has the Power of Chusing, since I ground That Power upon the Reason of a Choice agreeable to his Wisdom. And 'tis not This Fatality, (which is only the wifest Order of Providence) but a Blind Fatality or Necessity, void of All Wisdom and Choice, which we ought to avoid.

9. I had observed, that by lessening the Quantity of Matter, the Quantity of Objects, upon which God may exercise his Goodness, will be lessen'd. The Author answers, that instead of Matter, there are other things in the Void Space, on which God may exercise his Goodness. Be it so

..;:

que je n'en demeure point d'accord; car je viens que toute Subfance créée est accordpagnés de Matière. Mais soit, dis je 3 je reponds, que plus de Macière étoit compatible avec ces memas choses; & par consequent; c'est tousjours diminues le dit Objest L'instance d'un plus grand nombre d'Hommes ou d'Animaux; ne convient point; car ils ôteroient la Place à d'autres oboses.

que dans l'usage ordinaire, Sensosium ne signifie pas l'Organe de La Sensation. Moies les paroles de Rudolphus Goclenius, dans serium : Barbarum Scholasticorum, de il, qui interdum sunt Sinize Grecorum. Hi dicunt Assumption Exclusion illi secrume Sensorum, pro Sensorio, id ost, Organo Sensationis.

nome animos, no fustio pas pour la Perception. Un avougle, or mome un distrib, intervoir point. Il finit expliquer comment l'Ame s'apperçoit de cè qui est bors d'elle.

12. Dieu n'est pas présent aux choses par Situation, mais par Essence; su Presence se maniseste par son Operation immediate. Lui Presence de l'Ame est tout d'une autre nature. Dire qu'elle est dissus par le corps; c'est la rendre étendise de divisible; dire qu'elle

Tho' I don't grant it; for I hold that every created Substance is attended with Matter. However, let it be so: I answer, that More Matter was consistent with those same Things; and consequently the said Objects will be still lessened. The Instance of a greater Number of Men, or Animals, is not to the purpose; for They would fill up Place, in Exclusion of other Things.

10. It will be difficult to make me believe, that Sensorium does not, in its Usual Meaning, signify an Organ of Sensation. See the Words of Rudolphus Goclenius, in his Dictionarium Philosophicum; v. Sensiterium. Barbarum Scholasticorum, says he, qui interdum sunt Simia Gracorum. Hi dicunt 'Audminero. Ex quo illi fecerunt Sensiterium pro Sensorio, id est, Organo Sensationis.

ri. The mere Presence of a Substance, even an animated one, is not sufficient for Perception. A blind Man, and even a Man whose Thoughts are wandering, does not See. The Author must explain, how the Soul perceives what is without it self.

12. God is not present to Things by Situation, but by Essence: His Presence is manifested by his immediate Operation. The Presence of the Soul, is quite of another Nature. To say that it is diffused all over the Body, is to make it extended and F

Troisième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz. 66

qu'elle est toute entiere en chaque partie de quelque corps, c'est la rendre divisible d'elle même. L'attacher à un Point, la repandre par plusieurs Points, tout cela ne sont

qu'expressions abusives, Idola Tribûs.

13. Si la Force active se perdoit dans l'Univers par les Loix naturelles que Dieu y a établies, en sorte qu'il eut besoin d'une nouvelle Impression pour restituer cette force, comme un Ouvrier qui remedie à l'imperfection de sa Machine; le desordre n'au-roit pas seulement lieu à l'égard de nous, mais à l'égard de Dieu lui même. Il pouvoit le prevenir, & prendre mieux ses mesures, pour éviter un tel inconvenient: Aussi l'a-t-il fait en effect.

14. Quand j'ay dit que Dieu a opposé à de tels desordres des remedes par avance, je ne dis point que Dieu laisse venir les desordres, & puis les remedes; mais qu'il a trouvé moyen par avance d'empecher les desordres d'arriver.

15. On s'applique inutilement à critiquer mon Expression, que Dieu est Intelligentia Supramundana. Disant qu'il est au dessus du Monde, ce n'est pas nier qu'il est dans le Monde.

16. Je n'ay jamais donné sujet de douter que la Conservation de Dieu est une Preser-

vation

divisible. To say it is, the Whole of it. in every Part of the Body, is to make it divided from it felf. To fix it to a Point, to diffuse it all over many Points, are only abusive Expressions, Idola Tribus.

12. If active Force should diminish in the Universe, by the Natural Laws which God has established; so that there should be need for him to give a new Impression in order to restore That Force, like an Artist's Mending the Imperfections of his Machine; the Disorder would not only be with respect to Us, but also with respect to God bimself. He might have prevented it, and taken better Measures to avoid such an Inconvenience: And therefore, indeed, he has actually done it.

14. When I faid that God has provided Remedies before-hand against such Disorders, I did not say that God suffers Disorders to happen, and then finds Remedies for them; but that he has found a way before hand to prevent any Disorders hap-

pening.

15. The Author strives in vain to criticize my Expression, that God is * In- * See Ap-telligentia Supramundana. To say that No. 1. God is Above the World, is not denying that he is in the World.

16. I never gave any Occasion to doubt, but that God's Conservation is an actual F 2 Preser-

vation & Continuation actuelle des Etres, Pouvoirs, Ordres, Dispositions & Motions; & je crois l'avoir peutetre mieux expliqué que beaucoup d'autres. Mais dit on; This is All that I contended for; C'est en cela que consiste toute la Dispute. A cela je reponds. Serviteur très humble. Nostre Dispute consiste en bien d'autres choses. La Question est, Si Dieu n'agit pas le plus Regulierement, & le plus Parfaitement? Si sa Machine est capable de tomber dans des Desordres, qu'il est obligé de redresser par des voyes extraordinaires? Si la Volonté de Dieu est capable d'agir sans Raison ? Si l'Espace est un Etre absolu? Sur la Nature du Miracle; & quantité de Questions semblables, qui font une grande Separation.

17. Les Theologiens ne demeureront point d'accord de la These qu'on avance contre moy, qu'il n'y a point de difference par rapport à Dieu, entre le naturel & le surnaturel. La plus part des Philosophes l'approuveront encore moins. Il y a une difference infinie; mais il paroist bien qu'on ne l'a pas bien considerée. Le surnaturel surpasse toutes les forces des Creatures. Il faut venir à un Exemple: en voicy un, que j'ay souvent employé avec Succés. Si Dieue vouloit faire en sorte qu'un corps libre se promenât dans l'Ether en rond à l'entour d'une certain Centre sixe, sans que quelque autre Crea-

Preservation and Continuation of the Beings, Powers, Orders, Dispositions, and Motions of all Things: And I think I have perhaps explained it better than many Others. But, fays the Author, This is all that I contended for. To this I answer; Your Humble Servant for That, Sir. Our Dispute consists in many other Things. The Question is, Whether God does not act in the most regular and most perfect Manner? Whether his Machine is liable to Diforders, which he is obliged to mend by extraordinary Means? Whether the Will of God can act without Reason? Whether Space is an absolute Being? Also concerning the Nature of Miracles; and many fuch Things, which make a wide Difference between us.

Position against me; viz. that there is no Difference, with respect to God, between Natural and Supernatural: And it will be still less approved by most Philosophers. There is a vast Difference between these two Things; but it plainly appears, it has not been duly consider'd. That which is Supernatural, exceeds all the Powers of Creatures. I shall give an Instance, which I have often made use of with good Success. If God would cause a Body to move free in the Æther round about a certain fixed Centre, without any other Creature

70 Troisième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

Creature agisse sur lui; se dis que cela ne se peut que par Miracle, n'étant pas explicable par les natures des corps. Car un corps libre s'écarte naturellement de la ligne courbe par la tangente. C'est ainsi que je soutiens que l'attraction proprement dite des corps, est une chose miraculeuse, ne pouvant pas étre expliquée par leur Nature.





acting upon it: I fay, it could not be done without a Miracle; fince it cannot be explained by the Nature of Bodies. For, a free Body does naturally recede from a Curve in the Tangent. And therefore I maintain, that * the Attraction of Bodies, properly fo called, is a Miraculous Thing, fince it cannot be explained by the Nature of Bodies.





^{*} See Appendix, No. 8. and the Note on Dr. Clarke's Fifth Reply, No. 113.

Troisième Réplique de Mr. CLARKE.

1. CE que l'on dit ici, ne regarde que la Signification de certains Mots. On peut admettre les Définitions, que l'on trouve ici; mais cela n'empêchera pas qu'on ne puisse appliquer les Raisonnemens Marthematiques à des Sujets Physiques & Me-

taphysiques.

2. Il est indubitable, que rien n' existe, sans qu'il y ait une Raison suffisante de son existence; & que rien n' existe d' une certaine maniere plûtôt que d'une autre, sans qu' il y ait aussi une Raison suffisante de cette maniere d'exister. Mais à l'égard des choses qui sont indifférentes en elles mêmes, la simple Volonté est une Raison suffisante pour leur donner l'existence, ou pour les faire exister d'une certaine maniere ; & cette Volonté n' a pas befoin d' être déterminée par une Cause étrangere. Voici des Exemples de ce que je viens de dire. Lors que Dieu a créé ou placé une particule de Matiere dans un lieu plûtôt que dans un autre, quoique tous les lieux soient semblables; il n' en a eu aucune autre raison que sa Volonté. Et supposé que l' Espace

\$:\$

Dr. CLARKE's Third Reply.

1. THIS relates only to the Signification of Words. The Definitions here given, may well be allowed; And yet Mathematical Reasonings may be applyed to Physical and Metaphysical Subjects.

2. Undoubtedly nothing is, without a sufficient Reason wby it is, rather than not; and why it is Thus, rather than Otherwise. But in things in their own Nature indifferent; mere Will, without any thing External to influence it, is alone That sufficient Reason. As in the Instance of God's creating or placeing any particle of matter in One place rather than in Another, when All places are Originally alike. And the Case is the same, even though Space were nothing real, but only the mere Order of Bodies: For still it would be absolutely indifferent, and there could be no other reason but mere Will, why Three equal Particles should be placed or ranged in the Order a, b, c, rather than in the contrary Order.

74 Troisième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

Espace ne fût rien de réel, mais seulement un Simple Ordre des Corps; la Volonté de Dieu ne laisseroit pas d'être la seule possible raison pour laquelle trois Particules égales auroient été placées ou rangées dans l'ordre a, b, c, plûtôt que dans un ordre contraire. On ne sçauroit donc tirer de cette Indifference des Lieux aucun Argument, qui prouve qu' il n' y a point d' Espace réel. Car les differens Espaces sont réellement di-flinces l'un de l'autre, quoiqu'ils soient parfaitement Semblables. D'ailleurs, si l' on suppose que l'Espace n'est point réel, & qu' il n'est simplement que l' Ordre & l' Arrangement des Corps, il s' ensuivra une absurdité palpable. Car, selon cette idée; si la Terre, le Soleil, & la Lune, avoient été placez où les Étoiles fixes les plus éloignées se trouvent à present, (pourvû qu'ils eussent été placez dans le même ordre, & à la meme distance l'un de l'autre;) non seulement c'eut été la même chose, comme le sçavant Auteur le dit très-bien: mais il s' ensuivroit aussi que la Terre, le Soleil & la Lune, seroient en co cas-là dans le même Lieu, où ils sont presentement: Ce qui est une Contradiction manifeste. Les Anciens || n' ont point dit que tout

| On a fait ces Remarques à l'occasion d' un Endroit de la Lettre de Mr. Leibnitz, qui servoit d'Enveloppe au troisséme Ecrit, qu'il envoya.

Espace

And therefore no Argument can be drawn from this Indifferency of All places, to prove that no Space is real. For different Spaces are really different or distinct one from another, though they be perfectly alike. And there is This evident abfurdity in supposing Space not to be real. but to be merely the Order of Rodies; that, according to That Notion, if the Earth and Sun and Moon had been placed where the remotest fixt Stars now are. (provided they were placed in the fame Order and Distance they now are with regard one to another,) it would not only have been, (as this Learned Author rightly says,) la même chose, the same Thing in effect; which is very true: But it would also follow, that they would Then have been in the same Place too, as they are Now: Which is an express Contradiction. The Ancients did not call All Space which is word of Bodies, but only extramundane Space, by the Name of Imaginary Space. The meaning of which, is not,

^{||} This was occasioned by a Passage in the private Letter, wherein Mr. Leibnitz's Third Paper came inclosed.

76 Troisième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

Espace destitué de Corps étoit un Espace Imaginaire: Ils n' ont donné ce nom qu' à l' Espace qui est au delà du Monde. Et ils n' ont pas voulu dire par là, que cet Espace n' est * pas réel; mais seulement que nous ignorons entierement quelles sortes de choses il y a dans cet Espace. J' ajoute que les Auteurs, qui ont quelquesois employé le mot d' imaginaire pour marquer que l' Espace n' étoit pas réel, n' ont point prouvé ce qu' ils avançoient par le simple usage de ce Terme.

3. L'Espace n'est pas une Substance, un Etre eternel & insini; mais une Proprieté, ou une † suite de l'existence d'un Etre insini & éternel. L'Espace insini est l'Immensité: Mais l'Immensité n'est pas Dieu: donc l'Espace insini n'est pas Dieu. Ce que l'on dit ici des parties de l'Espace; n'est point une difficulté. L'Espace insini est absolument & essentiellement indivisible; & c'est une Contradiction dans les termes, que de supposer qu'il soit divisé; car il faudroit qu'il y eut un Espace entre les parties que l'en suppose divisées; ce qui est supposer que l'Espace est | di-

† Voiez ci-dessous la Note sur ma quatrième Réplique. S. 10.

Voïez ci-dessus, § 4. de ma Seconde Réplique,

^{*} Le Neant n' a point de Dimensions, de Grandeur, ni de Quantité: il n' a aucune Proprieté.

that such Space is * not real; but only that We are wholly ignorant what kinds of Things are in that Space. Those Writers, who by the Word, imaginary, meant at any time to affirm that Space was not real; did not thereby prove, that it was not real.

3. Space is not a Being, an eternal and infinite Being, but a Property, or a † confequence of the Existence of a Being infinite and eternal. Infinite Space, is Immensity: But Immensity is not God: And therefore Infinite Space, is not God. Nor is there any Difficulty in what is here alledged about Space having Parts. For Infinite Space is One, absolutely and effentially indivisible: And to suppose it parted, is a contradiction in Terms; because there must be Space in the Partition it felf; which is to suppose it parted, and yet not parted at the same time. The

† See below, the Nove on my Fourth Reply, § 10. See above, § 4. of my Second Reply.

^{*} Of Nothing, there are no Dimensions, no Magnitude, no Quantity, no Properties.

visé & non divisé en même temps. Quoique Dieu soit Immense ou Present par tout, sa Substance n' en est pourtant pas plus divisée en parties, que son Existence l' est par la Durée. La difficulté que l' on fait ici, vient uniquement de l' abus du mot de Parties.

4. Si l' Espace n'étoit que l' Ordre des choses qui coëxistent, il s'ensuivroit que si Dieu faisoit mouvoir le Monde tout entier en ligne droite, quelque degré de vitesse qu'il eut, il ne laisseroit pas d'être toujours dans le même lieu; & que rien ne recevroit aucun choc, quoique ce mouvement sur arrêté subitement. Et si le Temps n'étoit qu' un Ordre de Succession dans les créatures; il s'ensuivroit que si Dieu avoit créé le Monde quelques millions d'années plûtôt, il n'auroit pourtant pas eté créé plûtôt. De plus, l'Espace & le Temps sont des Quantitez; ce qu' on ne peut dire de la Situation & de l' Ordre.

5. On prétend ici, que parce que l'Espace est uniforme ou parfaitement Semblable, equ' aucune de ses parties ne differe de l'autre; il s' ensuit que si les Corps qui ont été créez dans un certain lieu, avoient été créez dans un autre lieu, (supposé qu'ils conservassent la même Situation entre eux,) ils ne laisseroient pas d'avoir été créez dans le même lieu. Mais c'est une Contradiction manifeste.

Immensity or Omnipresence of God, is no more a dividing of his Substance into Parts; than his Duration, or continuance of existing, is a dividing of his existence into Parts. There is no difficulty here, but what arises from the figurative Abuse of the Word, Parts.

4. If Space was nothing but the Order of Things coexisting; it would follow, that if God should remove in a streight Line the whole Material World Entire, with any swiftness whatsoever; yet it would still always continue in the same Place: And that nothing would receive any Shock upon the most sudden stopping of that Motion. And if Time was nothing but the Order of Succession of created Things; it would follow, that if God had created the World Millions of Ages sooner than he did, yet it would not have been created at all the sooner. Further: Space and Time are Quantities; which Situation and Order are not.

5. The Argument in This Paragraph, is; That because Space is Uniform or Alike, and One Part does not differ from another; therefore the Bodies created in One place, if they had been created in Another place, (supposing them to keep the same Situation with regard to each other,) would still have been created in the Same Place as before: Which is a manifest Contradiction. The Uniformity

Appendice, N°. 4.

maniseste. Il est vrai que l' Unisormité de l' Espace prouve, que Dieu n' a pu avoir aucune raison externe pour créer les choses dans un lieu plûtôt que dans un autre: Mais cela empêche-t-il que sa volonté n' ait été une raison suffisante pour agir en quelque lieu que ce soit, puisque tous les lieux sont indifferent ou semblables, & qu' il y a une bonne raison pour agir en quelque lieu?

6. Le même raisonnement, dont je me suis servi dans la section précédente, doit

avoir lieu ici.

7, & 8. Lors qu' il y a quelque difference dans la Nature des choses, la -Consideration de cette Difference détermins toujours un Agent Intelligent & très-sage. Mais lors que deux manieres d'agir sont *voïez l'également bonnes, comme dans les cas dont on a parlé ci-dessus; dire que Dieu * ne sçauroit agir du tout, & que ce n' est point une Impersection de ne pouvoir Agir dans un tel cas, parce que Dieu ne peut avoir aucune raison externe pour agir d'une certaine maniere plutôt que d'une autre; dire une telle chose, c'est insinuer que Dieu n'a pas en lui même un Principe d' Action, & qu' il est toujours, pour ainsi dire, machinalement déterminé par les choses de dehors. 9. Je suppose que la Quantité déterminée de Matiere, qui est à present dans le Monde, est la plus convenable à l' Etat present des choses; & qu' une plus grande (aussi bien

Uniformity of Space, does indeed prove, that there could be no (External) reason, why God should create things in One place rather, than in another: But does That hinder his own Will, from being to it self a sufficient reason of Acting in Any place, when All Places are Indifferent or Alike, and there be Good reason to Act in Some place?

6. The Same Reasoning takes place here,

as in the foregoing.

in the Nature of things, there the Confideration of That Difference always determines an Intelligent and perfectly wife Agent. But when Two ways of Acting are equally and alike good, (as in the Instances before mentioned;) to affirm in such case, that God * cannot Act at all, * See Aport that 'tis no Perfection in him to be able pendix, to Act, because he can have no External Reason to move him to Act one way rather than the other, seems to be a denying God to have in himself any Original Principle or Power of beginning to act, but that he must needs (as it were Mechanically) be always determined by things extrinsick.

of Matter, which is now in the World, is the most Convenient for the present Frame of Nature, or the Present State of Things: And that a Greater (as well as a Less)

G Quantity

82 Troisième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

bien qu' une plus petite) Quantité de Matiere, auroit été moins convenable à l'Etat present du Monde; & que par conséquent elle n' auroit pas été un plus grand Objet de la bonté de Dieu.

Goclenius entend par le mot de Sensorium, mais en quel sens Mr. le Chevalier * Newton s'est servi de ce mot dans son Livre. Si Goclenius croit que l'Oeil, l'Oreille, ou quelque autre Organe des Sens, est le Sensorium, il se trompe. Mais quand un Auteur employe un Terme d'Art, & qu'il déclare en quel sens il s'en sert; à quoi bon rechercher de quelle maniere d'autres Ecrivains ont entendu ce même Terme? Scapula traduit le mot, dont il s'agit ici, Domicilium, c'est à dire, le Lieu où l'Ame reside.

11. L'Ame d'un Aveugle ne voit point, parce que certaines obstructions empêchent les Images d'être portées au Sensorium, où elle est presente. Nous ne sçavons pas comment l'Ame d'un homme qui voit, apperçoit les Images, auxquelles elle est presente: Mais nous sçavons qu'elle ne sçauroit appercevoir les choses, auxquelles elle n'est pas

presente;

^{*} Voiez la Note sur § 3. de ma Prémiere Replique.

Quantity of Matter, would have made the Present Frame of the World less Convenient; and consequently would not have been a greater Object for God to have exercifed his Goodness upon.

10. The Question is not, what Goclenius, but what Sir Isaac Newton means by the word Sensorium, when the Debate is about the Sense of * Sir Isaac Newton's, and not about the Sense of Goclenius's Book. If Goclenius takes the Eye, or Ear, or any other Organ of Sensation, to be the Sensorium; he is certainly mistaken. But when any Writer expressy explains what he means by any Term of Art; of What Use is it, in this case, to enquire in what different Senses perhaps some other Writers have fometimes used the same Word? Scapula explains it by domicilium, the place where the Mind resides.

11. The Soul of a Blind Man does for This reason not see, because no Images are conveyed (there being some Obstruction in the way) to the Sensorium where the Soul is present. How the Soul of a Seeing Man, fees the Images to which it is present, we know not: But we are fure it cannot perceive what it is not present to; because no-

^{*} See the Note on § 3. in my First Reply.

84 Troisième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

presente; parce qu' un Etre ne sçauroit ni agir, ni recevoir des impressions, dans un

lieu où il n' est pas.

12. Dieu étant par tout, est actuellement present à tout, Essentiellement & * Substantiellement. Il est vrai que la Presence de Dieu se manisesse par son Operation; mais cette Operation seroit impossible sans la presence actuelle de Dieu. L' Ame n' est pas presente à chaque partie du Corps; & par conséquent elle n'agit, & ne sçauroit agir pas elle même sur toutes les parties du Corps, mais seulement sur le Cerveau, ou fur certains Nerfs & sur les Esprits, qui agissent sur tout le Corps, en vertu des Loix du mouvement, que Dieu a établies.

13, 14. Quoique les † Forces Actives, qui font dans l'Univers, diminuent, & qu'

^{· *} Dens omniprasens est, coc. C'est-à-dire: Dieu est present par tout, non sculement virtuellement, mais encore Substantiellement : Car la Force, [virtus] ne sçauroit subfister sans une Substance. Newtoni Principia, Scholium generale sub finem.

⁺ Le mot de Force Allive ne fignifie ici que le Mouvement, & l' Impetus ou la Force impulsive & relative des Corps, qui nait de leur mouvement, & qui lui est proportionnée. Car c'est le Passage suivant, qui a donné lieu à tout ce qu'on dit sur ce sujet dans cette Dispute. Apparet motum & nasci posse & perire, &c. C' cst-2dire. Il est évident que le Mouvement peut augmenter & diminuer. Mais la Tenacité des Corps Fluides, l'Attrition de leurs parties, & la foblesse de la Force Elastique dans les Corps Solides, font que le Mouvement tend toujours beaucoup plin à diminuer qu' à augmenter. Puis donc que tous

thing can Act, or be Acted upon, where it Is not.

present to every thing, Essentially and * Substantially. His Presence manifests it self indeed by its Operation, but it could not operate if it was not There. The Soul is not Omnipresent to every part of the Body, and therefore does not and cannot it self actually Operate upon every part of the Body, but only upon the Brain, or certain Nerves and Spirits, which, by Laws and Communications of God's appointing, influence the whole Body.

13. and 14. The † Active Forces, which are in the Universe, diminishing themselves

* Deus Omnipræsens est, non per virtutem solam, sed etlam per Substantiam: Nam virtus sine Substantia subsistere non potest. i.e. God is Omnipresent, not only virtually, but substantially: For, Powers cannot subsist without a Substance. Newtoni Principia, Scholium generals sub finem.

[†] Note: The word, Active Force, signifies here nothing but Motion, and the Impetus or relative impulsive Force of Bodies, arising from and being proportional to their Motion. For, the Occasion of what has passed upon This Head, was the following Passage. Apparet Motum & nasci posse & perire. Verum, per tenacitatem corporum suidorum, partiumq; suarum Attritum, visq; elasticæ in corporibus solidis imbecillitatem; multo magis in eam semper partem vergit natura rerum, ut pereat Motus, quam ut nascatur.

Quoniam igitur vari) illi Motus, qui in Mundo conspiciuntur, perpetuo decrescunt universi; necesse est grorsus

elles ayent besoin d'une nouvelle impression; ce n'est point un desordre, ni une imperfection dans l'Ouvrage de Dieu: Ce n'est qu'une suite de la nature des créatures, qui sont dans la dépendance. Cette dépendance n'est pas une chose, qui ait besoin d'être rectifiée. L'Exemple qu' on allegue d' un homme qui fait une Machine, n' a aucun rapport à la matiere dont il s' agit ici; parce que les Forces, en vertu des quelles cette Machine continue de fe mouvoir, sont tout-à-fait indépendantes de l'Ouvrier.

15. On peut admettre les mots d'Intelligentia supramundana, de la maniere dont l' Auteur les explique ici : Mais sans cette explication, ils pourroient aisément faire naitre une fausse idée, comme si Dieu n'étoit pas réellement & substantiellement

present par tout.

16. Je réponds aux Questions que l'on propose ici: Que Dieu agit toujours de la maniere la plus réguliere & la plus parfaite:

tous les differens mouvemens, qui sont dans le monde, dimi-nuent continuellement; il est absolument necessaire d'avoir recours à quelques Principes Attifs, pour conserver & pour renouveller ces mouvemens. Newtoni Optice, Quæst. ult. pag. 341.343.

fo as to stand in need of new impressions; is no inconvenience, no disorder, no imperfection in the Workmanship of the Universe; but is the consequence of the Nature of dependent Things. Which Dependency of Things, is not a matter that wants to be rectified. The Case of a Humane Workman making a Machine, is quite another thing: Because the Powers or Forces by which the Machine continues to move, are altogether independent on the Artisicer.

- 15. The Phrase, Intelligentia supramundana, may well be allowed, as it is here explained: But without this explication, the expression is very apt to lead to a wrong Notion, as if God was not really and substantially present every where.
- 16. To the Questions here proposed, the Answer is: That God does always ast in the most regular and perfect manner: That

prorsus, quo is conservari & recrescere possint, ut ad astrosa aliqua Principia recupramus. i. e. Tis evident, that Motion can in the Whole both increase and diminish. But because of the Tenacity of Fluid Bodies, and the Attrition of their Parts, and the Weakness of elastick Force in Solid Bodies; Motion is, in the Nature of things, always much more apt to diminish, than to increase. Since therefore all the various Motions that are in the World, are perpetually decreasing; 'tis ab olutely necessary, in order to preserve and renew those Motions, that we have recourse to some Active Principles. Newtoni Optice, Quæst. ult. p1g. 341, 343.

Qu' il n' y a aucun desordre dans son Ouvrage; & que les changemens qu' il fait dans l' Etat present de la Nature, ne sont pas plus extraordinaires, que le soin qu' il à de conserver cet Etat: Que lors que les soin qu' il à de conserver cet Etat: Que lors que les choses sont en elles mêmes absolument égales & indifferentes, la Volonté de Dieu peut so de terminer librement sur le choix; sans que le pouvoir que Dieu a d'agir de cêtte maniere, est une véritable Perfection. Ensin, je réponds que l'Espace ne dépend point de l'Ordre ou de la Situation, eu de l'Exitence des Corps.

17. Al' card des Miracles; Il ne s' agit pas de sçuvoir de que les Théologiens ou les Philosophes difent communément sur cette matiere, indie sur quelles raisons ils appuyent leurs sentimens. Si un Miracle est toujours une Aelson, qui surpasse la puissance de toutes les Oreatures \ il s' ensuivra que si un homme marche fur l'equ, & si le mouvement du Soleil (ou de la Terre) est arrêté, ce ne sera point un Miracle, puisque ces deux choses se penvent faire sans l'intervention d' une Puissance infinie. Si un Corps se meut autour d'un Centre dans le Vnide, & su ce movoement est une chose ordinaire, comme gelui des Planetes autour du Soleil, ce ne sera point un Miracle, soit que Dien lui même produife ce mouvement immédiatement, ou qu' il soit produit par quelque there are no Disorders in the Workmanship of God; and that there is nothing more entraordinary in the Alterations he is pleased to make in the France of things, than in this continuation of it: That in things in their own nature absolutely Equal and Indifferent, the Will of God can freely choose and determine it self, without any External Cause to impell it; and that its a Persection in God, to be able so to do. That Space, does not at all depend on the Order or Situation or Existence of Bodies. And as to the Notion of Miracles.

17. The Question is not, what it is that Divines or Philosophers usually allow or not allow; but what Reasons Men alledge for their Opinions. If a Miracle be That only, which surpasses the Power of all Created Beings; then for a Man to walk on the Water, or for the Motion of the Sun or the Earth to be Hopped, is no Miracle; fince none of these things require infinite Power to effect them. For a Body to move in a Circle round a Center in Vacuo; if it be usual (as the Planets moving about the Sun,) 'tis no Miracle, whether it be effected immediately by God bimfelf, or mediately by any Created Power: But if it be unusual, (as, for a beauty Body to be suspended and move so in the Air,) tis equally a Miracle, whether it be effected immediately

90 Troisième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

quelque: Créature. Mais si ce mouvement autour d'un Centre est rare & extraordinaire, comme seroit celui d'un Corps pesant sur spendu dans l'air; ce sera également un Miracle, soit que Dieu même produise ce mouvement, ou qu'il soit produit par une Créature invisible. Ensin, si tout ce qui n'est pas l'estet des Forces naturelles des Corps, & qu'on ne sçauroit expliquer par ces Forces, est un Miracle; il s'ensuivra que tous les mouvemens des Animaux sont des Miracles. Ce qui semble prouver démonssirativement, que le sçavant Auteur a une sausse idée de la nature du Miracle.



Quatriéme

diately by God bimfelf, or mediately by any invisible Created Power. Lastly; if whatever arises not from, and is not explicable by, the Natural Powers of Body, be a Miracle; then Every animal-motion whatsoever, is a Miracle. Which seems demonstrably to show, that this Learned Author's Notion of a Miracle is erroneous.



Mr. LEIB-

Quatrième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ,

o u

Réponse au Troisiéme Ecrit Anglois.

1. D'Ans les choses indifferentes absolument, il n'y a point de choix, & par consequent point d'élection ny volonté; púisque le choix doit avoir quelque raison ou principe.

2. Une simple volonté sans aucun motif, (a mere Will,) est une siction non seulement contraire à la perfection de Dieu, mais encore chimerique & contradictoire, incompatible asset la Desinition de la volonté.

assez refutés dans la Theodicée.

3. Il est indifferent de ranger trois corps égaux & en tout semblables, en quel ordre qu' on voudra; & par consequent ils ne seront jamais rangés, par celuy qui ne fait rien qu' avec sagesse. Mais aussi étant l'Auteur des choses, il n'en produira point, & par consequent il n'y en a point dans la Nature.



Mr. LEIBNITZ'S Fourth Paper.

BEING

An Answer to Dr. CLARKE's Third' Reply.

is no [Foundation for] Choice; and consequently no Election, nor Will; since Choice must be founded on some Reason, or Principle.

2. A mere Will without any Motive, ist a Fiction, not only contrary to God's Perfection, but also chimerical and contrardictory; inconsistent with the Definition of the Will, and sufficiently consuted in my Theodicae.

3. Tis a thing indifferent, to place three Bodies, equal and perfectly alike, in any: order whatsoever; and consequently they, will * never be placed in Any order, by Him. * See Apwho does nothing without Wisdom. But pendix, then, He being the Author of things, no N° 4, such things will be produced by bim at all; and 9, and consequently there are no such things in Nature.

4. There

94 Quatrième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

4. Il n'y a point deux Individus indifcernables. Un Gentilbomme d'esprit de mes amis, en parlant avec moy en presence de Madame l'Electrice dans le jardin de Herrenhausen, crut qu'il trouveroit bien deux seuilles entierement semblables. Madame l'Electrice l'en desia, & il courut long temps en vain pour en chercher. Deux gouttes d'eau, ou de lait, regardées par le Microscope, se trouveront discernables. C'est un argument contre les Atomes, qui ne sont pas moins combattus que le Vuide par les Principes de la veritable Metaphysique.

5. Ces grands Principes de la Raison suffisante & de l' Identité des indiscernables, changent l'état de la Metaphysique; qui devient réelle & demonstrative par leur moyen: Au lieu qu' autres fois elle ne consission presque qu' en termes Vuides.

6. Poser deux choses indiscernables, est poser la même chose sous deux noms. Ainsi l'hypothese, que l'Univers auroit eu d'abord une autre position du Temps & du Lieu que celle qui est arrivée essessivement; de que pourtant toutes le parties de l'Univers auroient eu la même position entre elles, que celle qu'elles ont receüe en esset; est une sistion impossible.

4. There is no fuch thing as Two Individuals indiscernible from each other. An Ingenious Gentleman of my Acquaintance, discoursing with me, in the presence of Her Electoral Highness the Princess Sophia. in the Garden of Herrenbausen; thought he could find two Leaves perfectly alike. The Princess defied him to do it, and he ran all over the Garden a long time to look for fome; but it was to no purpose. Two Drops of Water, or Milk, viewed with a Microscope, will appear distinguishable from each other. This is an Argument against Atoms; which are confuted, as well as a Vacuum, by the Principles of true Metaphysicks.

5. Those great Principles of a fufficient Reason, and of the Identity of Indiscernibles, change the State of Metaphysicks. That Science becomes real and demonstrative by means of these Principles; whereas before, it did generally consist in empty Words.

6. To suppose two things indiscernible, is to suppose the same thing under two Names. And therefore to suppose that the Universe could have had at first another position of Time and Place, than that which it actually had; and yet that all the Parts of the Universe should have had the same Situation among themselves, as that which they actually had; such a Supposition, I say, is an impossible Fiction.

7. The

96 Quatriente Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

7. La même raison qui fait que l'Espace hors du monde est imaginaire, prouve que tout espace vuide est une chose imaginaire; car ils ne different que du grand au petit.

8. Si l'Espace est une proprieté ou un attribut, il doit être la proprieté de quali que Substance. L'Espace quide borné, que ses patrons supposent entre deux Corps, da quelle Substance serb-t-il la proprieté ou l'Affection?

9. Si l'Espace insini est l'immensité, l'Espace sini sera l'opposé de l'immensité, c'est à dire, la mensurabilité, ou l'Exendue bornèe. Or l'Etendue doit etre l'affection d'un Etendu. Mais si cet Espace est vuide, il sera un attribut sans sujet, une Etendue d'aucun Etendu. C'est pourquor, en faisant de l'Espace une proprieté, l'on tombe dans mon sentiment qui le fait un Ordre des choset, d'non pas quelque chose d'absolu.

bien loin d'etre une proprieté ou accidentalité opposée à la Substance, il sera plus Subsistant que les Substances. Dieu ne le sauvoit detruire, ny même changer en rien. Il est non seulement inmense dans le tout, mais encore immuable & Eternèl en chaque partie. Il y auna une infinité de choses Eternelles hors de Dieu. 7. The same reason, which shows that extramundane Space is imaginary, proves that All empty Space is an imaginary thing; for they differ only as greater and less.

8. If Space is a property or Attribute, it must be the Property of some Substance. But what Substance will That Bounded empty Space be an Affection or Property of, which the Persons Lam arguing with, suppose to be between Two Bodies?

9. If infinite Space is Immensity, sinite Space will be the Opposite to Immensity, that is, 'twill be Mensurability, or limited Extension. Now Extension must be the Affection of some thing extended. But if That Space be empty, it will be an Attribute without a Subject, an Extension without any thing extended. Wherefore by making Space a Property, the Author falls in with My Opinion, which makes it an Order of things, and not any thing absolute.

from being a Property or an Accident opposed to Substance, it will have a greater reality than Substances themselves. God cannot destroy it, nor even change it in any respect. It will be not only immense in the whole, but also Immutable and Eternal in every part. There will be an infinite number of Eternal things besides God.

parties, c'est dire que les Espaces sinis ne le composent point; & que l' Espace infini pourroit subsisser, quand tous les Espaces sinis servient reduits à rien. Ce servit comme se l'an disoit dans la Supposition Cartesienne d'un Univers corpotal étendu sans borner, que ces Usavers pourroit subsisser, quand tous les Corps qui le composent, se roient raduits d'rien.

12. On attribue des parties à l'Espace, p. 19. 3° Edition de la Desense de l'Argument contre M. Dodwell; Or or les fait inseparables l'une de l'autre. Mais p. 30, de la Secondo Desense, on en fait des parties improprement dites: Cola se peut entendre dans un bon sens,

13. De dire que Dieu fasse avancer tout l'Univers, en ligne droise ou antre, sans y rien changer autrement, s'est encore une Supposition Chimerique. Car deux états indiscernables sont le même état, & par consequent c'est un changement quine change rien. De plus, il n'y any rime ny raison. Or Dieu ne fait rien sans raison ser il est impossible qu' il y en eit ien. Outre que ce sarvit agendo nihil agere, comma je viens de dire, à cause de l'indiscernabilisé.

11. To fay that infinite Space has no parts, is to fay that it does not confift of finite Spaces; and that Infinite Space might subsist, though all finite Spaces should be reduced to nothing. It would be, as if one should say, in the Cartesian Supposition of a material extended unlimited World; that such a World might subsist, though all the Bodies of which it consists, should be reduced to nothing.

12. The Author ascribes Parts to Space; p. 19. of the 3d Edition of his Defense of the Argument against Mr. Dodwell; and makes them inseparable one from another. But, p. 30. of his Second Defense, he says they are parts improperly so called: Which

may be understood in a good sense.

113. To lay that God can cause the whole Universe to move forward in a Right Line, or in any other Line, without making otherwise any Alteration in it; is another * Chimerical Supposition. For, two States * See Apindifcernible from each other, are the fame pendin, State; and confequently, its a change without any change. Befides, there is neither Rhime nor Reason in it. But God does nothing without Reason; And tis impossible there should be any here. Bendes, it would be agendo nibil agere, as Thave just now said, because of the Indiscernibility.

100 Quatrième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

14. Ce sont Idola Tribûs, Chimeres toutes pures, & Imaginations superficielles. Tout cela n'est fondé, que sur la Supposition que

l' Espace imaginaire est réel.

15. C'est une siction semblable, c'est à dire impossible, de supposer que Dieu ait créé le Monde quelques Millions d'années plustost. Ceux qui donnent dans ces sortes de Fictions, ne sauroient répondre à ceux qui argumenteroient pour l'Eternité du Monde. Car Dieu ne faisant rien sans raison, Époint de raison n'estant assignable pourquoy il n'ait point créé le monde plustost; il s'ensuivra, ou qu'il n'ait rien crée du tout, ou qu'il ait produit le monde avant tout temps assignable, c'est à dire que le monde soit Éternel. Mais quand on montre que le commencement, quel qu'il soit, est tousjours la même chose, la question pourquoy il n'en a pas été autrement, cesse.

- 16. Si l'Espace & le Temps estoient quelque chose d'absolu, c'est à dire, s'ils estoient autre chose que certains Ordres des choses; ce que je dis, seroit Contradiction. Mais cela n'étant point, l'Hypothèse est contradictoire, c'est à dire, c'est une Fiction impossible.
- 17. Et c'est comme dans la Geometrie, où l'on prouve quelque fois par la Supposition

14. These are Idola Tribûs, mere Chimeras, and superficial Imaginations. All this is only grounded upon the Supposition,

that imaginary Space is real.

15. It is a like fiction, (that is) an impossible one, to suppose that God might have created the World some Millions of Years fooner. They who run into fuch kind of Fictions, can give no answer to one that should argue for the Eternity of the World. For fince God does nothing without Reason, and no Reason can be given why he did not create the World fooner: it will follow, either that he has created nothing at all, or that he created the World before any assignable time, that is, that the World is Eternal. But when once it has been shown, that the Beginning, whenever it was, is always the fame thing; the Question, Why it was not otherwise ordered, becomes needless and insignificant.

16. If Space and Time were any thing absolute. that is, if they were any thing else, besides certain Orders of things; then indeed my affertion would be a Contradiction. But since it is not so, the Hypothesis | that Space and Time are any thing absolute is contradictory, that is, 'tis an

impossible Fiction.

17. And the Case is the same as in Geometry; where by the very Supposition that a H 3 Figure

102 Quatrième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

tion même, qu' une Figure soit plus grande, qu' en effect elle n' est point plus grande. C'est une Contradiction; mais elle est dans l'Hypothese, laquelle pour cela même se

trouve fausse.

18. L'uniformité de l'Espace fait qu'il n'y a aucune Raison ny Interne ny Externe, pour en discerner les parties, & pour y choisir. Car cette Raison Externe de discerner, ne sauroit être fondée que dans l'Interne; autrement c'est discerner l'indiscernable, ou c'est choisir sans discerner. La volonté sans Raison, seroit le Hazard des Epicuriens. Un Dieu qui agiroit par une telle volonté, seroit un Dieu de nom. La saurce de ces erreurs est, qu'on n'a point de soin d'éviter ce qui déroge aux Persections Divines.

19. Lors que deux choses incompatibles sont également bonnes, & que tant en elles que par leur combinaison avec d'autres, l'une n'a point d'avantage sur l'autre; Dieu n'en produira aucune.

20. Dieu n'est jamais determiné par les choses externas, mais sousjours par de qui est en luy, c'est à dira par ses comoissances, avant qu'il y ait aucune chose kors de luy.

puisse limitation ne sauroit avoir lieu.

Figure is greater than it really is, we sometimes prove that it is not greater. This indeed is a Contradiction; but it lies in the Hypothesis, which appears to be false for

that very reason.

18. Space being uniform, there can be neither any External nor Internal Reason. by which to distinguish its parts, and to make any choice among them. For, any External Reason to discern between them. can only be grounded upon fome Internal one. Otherwise we should discern what is indifcernible, or chuse without discerning. A Will without Reason, would be the · Chance of the Epicureans. A.God, who should act by such a Will, would be a God only in Name. The cause of these Errors proceeds from want of care to avoid what derogates from the Divine Perfections.

19. When two things which cannot Both be together, are equally good; and neither in themselves, nor by their combination with other things; has the one any advantage over the other; God will produce * Nei- * See Appendix

ther of them.

20. God is never determined by external and 9. things, but always by what is in himself; that is, by his Knowledge of things, before any thing exists without himself.

21. There is no possible Reason, that can limit the quantity of Matter; and therefore

fuch limitation can have no place.

 H_{4}

22. And

104 Quatrième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

- 22. Et supposé cette limitation arbitraire, on pourroit tousjours adjouter quelque chose sans deroger à la Perfection des choses qui sont deja: Et par consequent il faudra tousjours y adjouter quelque chose, pour agir suivant le Principe de la Perfection des Operations Divines.
- 23. Ainsi on ne sauroit dire que la presente quantité de la matiere est la plus convenable pour leur presente Constitution. Et quand même cela seroit, il s'ensuivroit que cette presente Constitution des choses ne seroit point la plus convenable absolument, si elle empeche d'employer plus de matiere; il vaudroit donc en choisir une autre, capable de quelque chose de plus,

24. Je serois bien aise de voir le passage d'un Philosophe, qui prenne Sensorium au-

trement que Goclenius.

25. Si Scapula dit que Sensorium est la place où l'entendement reside, il entendra l'Organe de la sensation interne. Ainsi il ne s'éloignera point de Goclenius.

26. Sensorium a tousjours été l'Organe de la sensation. La glande pineale seroit selon des Cartes, le Sensorium dans le sens qu' on rapporte de Scapula.

22. And Supposing an arbitrary Limitation of the Quantity of Matter, something might always be added to it without derogating from the Perfection of those things which do already exist; and consequently something must always be added. in order to act according to the Principle of the Perfection of the divine Operations.

22. And therefore it cannot be said. that the present quantity of Matter is the fittest for the present Constitution of Things. And supposing it were, it would follow that this present Constitution of things would not be the fittest absolutely, if it hinders God from using more Matter. It were therefore better to chuse another constitution of things, capable of something more.

24. I should be glad to see a passage of any Philosopher, who takes Sensorium in

any other Sense than Goclenius does.

25. If Scapula says that Sensorium is the place in which the Understanding resides, he means by it the Organ of internal Senfation. And therefore he does not differ from Goclenius.

26. Senforium has always fignified the Organ of Sensation. The Glandula pinealis would be, according to Cartefius, the Sensorium, in the above-mentioned sense of Scapula.

106 Quatrieme Ecrit de Mr. Lefenitz.

27. Il n' 9 a gueres d'Expression moins convenable sur ce sujet, que celle qui donne à Dieu un Sensorium. Il sémble qu' elle le fait l'Ame du Monde. Et on aura bien de la peine à donner à l'usage que M. Newton fait de ce mot, un sens qui le puisse justisser.

28. Quot qu' il s' apisse du sens de M. Newton, & non pas de celuy de Goclenius, on ne me doit point blamer d' avoir allegué le Dictionnaire Philosophique de cet auteur; parceque le but des Dictionnaires est

de marquer l'usage des termes.

29. Dieu 3' apperçoit des choses en hy même. L'Espace est le lieu des choses, & non pas le lieu des ldees de Dieu: A moins qu' on ne considere l'Espace comme quelque chose qui fasse l'Union de Dieu & des choses, à l'initation de l'Union de l'Ame & du Corps qu' on s' imagine; ce qui rendroit encore Dieu l'Ame du Monde.

30. Aussi a-t-on tort dans la Comparaison qu' on fait de la connoissance & de l'Operation de Dieu avec celle des ames. Les ames connoissent les choses, parce que Dieu a mis en elles un Principe Representatif de ce qui est bors d'elles. Mais Dieu connoiss les choses, parce qu' il les produit continuellement.

31. Les ames n'operent sur les choses selon moy, que parceque des Corps s'accommodent

27. There is hardly any Expression less proper upon this Subject, than that which makes God to have a Sensorium. It seems to make God the Soul of the World. it will be a hard matter to put a justifiable fense upon this Word, according to the Use Sir Ilaac Newton makes of it.

28. Though the question be about the Sense put upon that Word by Sir Isaac Newton, and not by Goclenius; yet I am not to blame for quoting the Philosophical Dictionary of that Author, because the design of Dictionaries is to shew the use of Words.

hnows 29. God perceives things in himself. Space is the Place of things, and not the Place of God's Ideas: Unless we look upon Space as fomething that makes an Union between God and Things, in imitation of the imagined Union between the Soul and the Body; which would still make God the Soul of the World.

ao. And indeed the Author is much in the wrong, when he compares God's Knowledge and Operation, with the Knowledge and Operation of Souls. The Soul knows things, because God has put into it a * * See Ap-Principle Representative of Things without. pendix, But God known things, because he produces them continually "

A. The Soul does slot all upon things. according to my Opinion, any otherwise than because 0113

108 Quatrieme Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

modent à leur desirs en vertu de l' harmonie que Dieu y a préétablie.

- 32. Mais ceux qui s' imaginent que les ames peuvent donner une Force nouvelle au Corps, & que Dieu en fait autant dans le monde pour redresser les defauts de sa machine; approchent trop Dieu de l'ame, en donnant trop à l'ame & trop peu à Dieu.
- 33. Car il n'y a que Dieu qui puisse donner à la nature de nouvelles Forces, mais il ne le fait que surnaturellement. S'il avoit besoin de le faire dans le cours naturel, il auroit fait un ouvrage tres imparsait. Il ressembleroit dans le monde à ce que le vulgaire attribue à l'Ame dans le Corps.
- 34. En voulant soutenir cette Opinion vulgaire de l'influence de l'Ame sur le Corps, par l'Exemple de Dieu operant bors de lui; on fait encore que Dieu ressembleroit trop à l'Ame du Monde. Cette assectation encore de blâmer mon Expression d'Intelligentia Supramundana, y semble pancher aussi.
- 35. Les images dont l'Ame est affectée immediatement, sont en elle même; maiselles repondent à celles du Corps. La presence de l'ame est imparsaite, one peut etre

because the Body adapts it self to the Desires of the Soul, by virtue of the * Har- * See Apmony, which God has pre-established be- No 5. tween them.

can give a new Force to the Body; and that God does the same in the World, in order to mend the Imperfections of his Machine; make God too much like the Soul, by ascribing too much to the Soul, and too little to God.

33. For, none but God can give a new Force to Nature; And he does it only fupernaturally. If there was need for him to do it in the natural course of things; he would have made a very imperfect Work. At That rate, He would be with respect to the World, what the Soul, in the vulgar notion, is with respect to the Body.

34. Those who undertake to defend the vulgar Opinion concerning the Soul's influence over the Body, by instancing in God's operating on things External; make God still too much like a Soul of the World. To which I add, that the Author's affecting to find Fault with the Words, Intelligentia Supramundana, seems also to incline that way.

35. The Images, with which the Soul is immediately affected, are within it felf; but they correspond to those of the Body. The presence of the Soul is impersect, and

110 Quatrieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

être expliquée que par cette correspondance. Mais celle de Dieu est parfaite, & se mamifeste par son Operation:

36. L' on suppose mal contre moy, que la presence de l'Ame est tiée avec son instance sur le Corps; puis qu' on sait que je rejeste

cette influence.

37. Il est aussi inexplicable que P Ame soit diffuse par le Cerveau, que de faire qu' elle foit diffuse par le Corps tout entier: La difference n'est que du plus au moins.

38. Ceux qui s' imaginent que les Forces actives fe diminuent d'elles mêmes dans le Monde, ne connoissent pas bien les principales loix de la nature, de la beauté des

ouvrages de Dieu,

39. Comment proseveront ils, que ce defant est une suite de la dependance des choses?

40. Ce defaut de nos Maebines, qui fait qu' elles ont besoin d'être redressées, vient de cela même, qu' elles ne sont pas affez dependantes de l'Ouvrier. Ainsi la dependance de Dieu qui est dans la Nature, bien loin d'être cause de ce defaut, est plustost cause que ce defaut n'y est point, parcequ' elle est si dependante d'un Ouvrier trop parfait pour faire un Ouvrage qui sit besoin d'être redressé. Il est vruy que chaque Machine particuliere de la nature, est en quelque façon sujette à être detracquée;

can only be explained by That Correspondence. But the presence of God is perfect, and manifested by his Operation.

... 36. The Author Iwrongly supposes against me, that the presence of the Soul is cannocted with its influence over the Body; for he knows. I reject That influence.

37. The Soul's being diffused through the Brain, is no less inexplicable, than its being diffuled through the whole Body. The Difference is only in more and less.

38. They who fancy that * active Force *See above, lessens of it self in the World, do not well on \$13, understand the principal Laws of Nature, of Dr. and the beauty of the Works of God ?

Third Reply.

29. How will they be able to prove, that this Defect is a consequence of the dependence of things?

40. The imperfection of our Machines. which is the reason why they want to be: mended, proceeds from this very thing, that they do not sufficiently depend upon the Workman. And therefore the dependence of Nature upon God, far from being the cause of such an impersection, is rather the reason why there is no such imperfection in Nature, because it depends so much upon an Artist, who is too perfect to make a work that wants to be mended. 'Tis true that every particular Machine of Nature,

Quatrieme Ecrit de Mr. Leienitz.

mais non pas l' Univers tout entier, qui ne sauroit diminuer en Persection.

41. On dit que l'Espace ne depend point de la Situation des Corps. Je reponds qu'il est wray qu'il ne depend point d'une telle ou telle Situation des Corps; mais il est det Ordre qui fait que les Corps sont Situables. o par lequel ils ont une Situation entre eux en existant ensemble, comme le temps est cet Ordre par rapport à leur position successive. Mais s' il n'y avoit point de Creatures, l' Espace & le Temps ne servient que dans les Idees de Dieu.

42. Il semble qu' on avoue icy que l'idée qu' on se fait du Miracle n'est pas celle qu' en ont communement les Theologiens & les Philosophes. Il me suffit donc, que mes Adversaires sont obligés de recourir à i ce qu' on appelle Miracle dans l'usage receu.

43. J' ay peur qu' en voulant changer le sens receu du Miracle, on ne tombe dans un sentiment incommode. La nature du Miracle ne consiste nullement dans l' usualité & inusualité; autrement les Monstres seroient des Miracles.

44. Il y a des Miracles d' une sorte inferieure, qu' un Ange peut produire; car il peut, par Exemple, faire qu' un bomme aille sur l'eau sans enfoncer. Mais il y a des Miracles T

Nature, is, in some measure, liable to be disordered; but not the whole Universe, which cannot diminish in Perfection.

- does not depend upon the Situation of Bodies. I answer: 'Tis true, it does not depend upon fireh or fuch a fituation of Bodies; but it is That Order, which renders Bodies capable of being fituated, and by which they have a Situation among themselves when they exist together; as Time is That Order, with respect to their Successive position. But if there were no Creatures, Space and Time would be only in the Meas of God.
- 42. The Author seems to acknowledge here, that his Notion of a Miracle is not the same with that which Divines and Philosophers usually have. It is therefore sufficient for my purpose, that my Adversaries are obliged to have recourse to what is commonly called a Miracle.

43. I am afraid the Author, by altering the Sense commonly put upon the Word Miracle, will fall into an inconvenient Opinion. The nature of a Miracle does not at all confist in Usualness or Unusualness; For then Monsters would be Miracles.

44. There are Miracles of an inferior fort, which an Angel can Work. He can, for instance, make a Man Walk upon the Water without finking. But there are Miracles

114 Quatrième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

Miracles reservés à Dieu, & qui surpassent toutes les Forces naturelles; tel est celuy de créer ou d'annibiler.

45. Il est surnaturel aussi, que les Corps s'attirent de loin sans aucun Moyen; or qu'un Corps aille en rond, sans s'écarter par la tangente, quoyque rien ne l'empéchât de s'écarter ainsi. Car ces effects ne sont point explicables par les natures des choses.

46. Pourquoy la Motion des animaux ne feroit elle point explicable par les Forces naturelles? Il est vray que le commencement des animaux est aussi inexplicable par leur Moyen, que le commencement du Monde.

P. S.

TOUS ceux qui sont pour le Vuide, se laissent plus mener par l'Imagination que par la raison. Quand j'étois jeune garçon, jè donnay aussi dans le vuide & dans les Atomes; mais la raison me ramena. L'Imagination étoit riante. On borne là ses recherches; on sixe la Meditation comme avec un clou; on croit avoir trouvé les premiers Elemens, un non plus ultra. Nous voudrions que la Nature n'allât pas plus loin; qu'elle sût sinie, comme notre Esprit: Mais ce n'est point connoître la grandeur, & la Majesté.

racles, which none but God can work; they exceeding all natural Powers. Of which kind, are *Creating* and *Annibilating*.

45. 'Tis also a supernatural thing, that Bodies should attract one another at a distance, without any intermediate Means; and that a Body should move round, without receding in the Tangent, though nothing hinder it from so receding. For these Effects cannot be explained by the Nature of things.

46. Why should it be impossible to explain the Motion of Animals by Natural Forces? Tho' indeed, the Beginning of Animals is no less inexplicable by natural Forces, than the Beginning of the World.

P. S.

A L L those who maintain a Vacuum, are more influenced by Imagination than by Reason. When I was a young Man, I also gave into the Notion of a Vacuum and Atoms; but Reason brought me into the right way. It was a pleasing Imagination. Men carry their inquiries no farther than those two things: They (as it were) nail down their Thoughts to them: They fancy, they have found out the first Elements of Things, a non plus ultra. We would have Nature to go no farther; and

116 Quatrième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnit L.

Majesté de l' Auteur des choses. Le moindre Corpuscule est actuellement subdivisé à l'infini & contient un Monde de nouvelles Creatures, dont l'Univers manqueroit, si ce Corpufcule étoit un Atome, c'est à dire, un corps tout d'une piece fans Subdivision. Tout de même, vouloir du Vuide dans la Nature, c'est attribuer à Dieu une Production tres imparfaite; c'est violer le grand Principe de la necessité d'une Raison sussi-Sante que bien des gens ont eu dans la bousber mais, dont ils n'ont point comu la force, comme j'ay montré dernierement, en faisant noir par ce Principe que l'Espace n'est que un Ordre des choses, comme le Temps, & nullement un Estre absolu. Sans parler de plusieurs autres raisons contre le Vuide & les Atomes; en voicy celles que je prends de la Perfection de Dieu, & de la raison suffisante. Je pose que toute persection que Dien e pû mettre dans les choses sans déroger aux autres Perfessions qui y sont, y a été mise. Or sigurant nous un Espace entierement vuide, Dieu y pouvoit mettre quelque matiere sans déroger en rien à toutes les autres choses: Donc il l' y a mise: Dont il n' ya point d'Espace ontierement vuide: Donc tout est plein. Le même raisonnement prouve qu' il n' y a point de Corpuscule, qui ne soit subdivisé. Voicy encore l'autre raisonnement pris de la necessité d' une Raison suffilante. Un' est point possible qu' il y air

to be finite, as our Minds are: But this is being Ignorant of the greatness and Majefly of the Author of things. The leaft Corpuscle is actually subdivided in infinitum, and contains a World of other Creatures, which would be wanting in the Universe, if That Corpuscle was an Atom, that is, a Body of one entire piece without Subdivision. In like manner, to admit a Vacuum in Nature, is ascribing to God a very imperfect Work: 'Tis violating the grand Principle of the necessity of a sufficient Reason; which many have talked of, without understanding its true meaning; as Ihave lately shown, in proving, by That Principle, that Space is only an Order of things, as Time also is, and not at all an absolute Being. To omit many other Arguments against a Vacuum and Atoms, I shall here mention those which I ground upon God's Perfection, and upon the necessity of a sufficient Reason. I lay it down as a Principle, that every Perfection, which God * could impart to things without derogating from their other Perfections, has actually been imparted to them. Now, let us fancy a Space wholly empty. God * could have placed some Matter in it, without derogating in any respect from all other things:

^{*} See Dr. Clarke's Third Reply, § 9; and his Fourth Reply, § 22.

118 Quatrième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

un Principe de determiner la Proportion de la matiere, ou du rempli au vuide, ou du vuide au plein. On dira pout être que l'un doit être égal à l'autre; Mais comme la matiere est plus parfaite que le vuide, la Raison veut qu' on observe la Proportion Geometrique, & qu' il y ait d' autant plus de plein, qu' il merite d'être preferé. Mais ainsi il n' y aura point de vuide du tout; car la Perfection de la matiere ost à celle du vuide. comme quelque chose à risn. Il en est de méme des Atomes: Quelle raison peut on assigner de borner la nature dans le progrés de la Subdivision? Fictions purement Arbitraires, & indignes de la vraye Philosophie. Les raisons qu' on allegue pour le vuide, ne sont que des Sopbismes.

Therefore he hath actually placed forne Matter in That Space: Therefore, there is no Space wholly Empty: Therefore All is full. The fame Argument proves that there is no Corpuscle, but what is Subdivided. I shall add another Argument, grounded upon the necessity of a sufficient Reason. Himposible there should be any Principle to determine What Proportion of Matter there ought to be, out of all the possible degrees from a Plenum to a Vacuum, or from a Vacuum to a Plenum. Perhaps it will be faid, that the one should be equal to the other: But because Matter is more perfect than a Vacuum, Reason requires that a Geometrical Proportion should be observed, and that there should be | as much more Matter than Vacuum, as the former deserves to have the preference before the latter. then there must be No Vacuum at all; for the Perfection of Matter is to that of a Vacuum, as || Something to Nothing. the case is the same with Atoms: What reafon can any one assign for confining Nature in the Progression of Subdivision? These are Fictions merely Arbitrary, and unworthy of true Philosophy. The reafons alledged for a Vacuum, are mere Sophifms.

^{||} See Dr. Clarke's Third Reply, § 9. and his Fourth Reply, § 22.

Quatrième Réplique de Mr. CLARKE.

* Voïez

ci-dessus le Second

Ecrit de

Mr. Leibnitz, § 1.

† Voïez

l'Appen-

| Voyez

l'Appen-

1, & 2. LA Doctrine que l'on trouve ici, conduit à la Necessité & à la Fatalité, en supposant que les Motifs ont le même rapport à la Volonté d'un Agent Intelligent, que * les Poids à † une Balance; de sorte que quand deux choses sont absolument indifferentes, un Agent Intelligent ne || peut choisir l'une ou l'autre, comme une Balance ne peut se mouvoir lors que les Poids sont égaux des deux cotez. Mais voici dice, N°3. en quoi consiste la Difference. Une Balance n' est pas un Agent : elle est tout-à-sait Passive, & les Poids agissent sur elle; de sorte que quand les Poids sont égaux, il n' y a dice, Nº4. rien qui la puisse mouvoir, Mais les Etres Intelligens sont des Agents; ils ne sont point simplement passifs, & les Motifs n'agissent pas sur eux, comme les Poids agissent sur une Balance: Ils ont des Forces Actives, & ils agissent, quelque fois par de puissans Motifs, quelque fois par des Motifs foibles, o quelque fois lors que les choses sont absor-lument indifferentes. Dans ce dernier cas, it peut y avoir de très-bonnes raisons pour agir, quoique deux ou plusieurs manieres

\$:\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$\$

Dr. CLARKE's Fourth Reply.

1, and 2. HIS Notion leads to universal Necessity and Fate, by fuppoling that Motives have the same relation to the Will of an Intelligent Agent, as * Weights have to † a Balance; so that of two things absolutely indifferent, an In- above, telligent Agent can || no more choose Either, mr. Leibthan a Balance can move it felf when the cond Paper, Weights on both sides are Equal. But the \$ 1. Difference lies here. A Balance is no pendix, Agent, but is merely Paffive and atted upon No. 3. by the Weights; so that, when the Weights | See Appendix, are equal, there is nothing to move it. But No 4. Intelligent Beings are Agents; not passive, in being moved by Motives, as a Ralance is by Weights; but they have Active Powers and do move Themselves, sometimes upon the View of frong Motives, sometimes upon weak ones, and sometimes where things are absolutely indifferent. In which latter case, there may be very good reason to all, though two or more Ways of acting may be absolutely indifferent. This learned Writer always supposes the contrary, as a Principle; but gives no Proof of it, either from

122 Quatrième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

d'agir puissent être absolument indifferentes. Le sçavant Auteur suppose toujours le con-traire, comme un Principe; mais il n'en donne aucune Preuve tirée de la Nature des

Choses, ou des Perfections de Dieu.

l'Appen-

and 4.

3, & 4. Si le raisonnement que l' on trouve ici, étoit bien sondé, il prouveroit que Dieu n' a créé aucune Matiere, & même qu' il est * impossible qu' il en puisse créer. Car les parties de Matiere, quelle dice, N° 9. qu' elle soit, qui sont parfaitement solides. sont aussi parfaitement semblables, pourvi qu' elles ayent des Figures & des Dimensions égales; ce que l'on peut toûjours supposer, comme une chose possible. Ces parties de Matiere pourroient donc occuper également bien un autre lieu que celui qu'elles occupent; & par consequent il étoit impossible, selon le Raisonnement du sçavant Auteur, que Dieu les plaçât où il les a actuellement placées, parce qu' il auroit pû avec la même façilité les placer à rebours. Il est vrai qu' on ne sçauroit voir deux Feuilles, ni peutêtre deux Goutes d'eau, parfaitement sem-blables; parce que ce sont des Corps fort composez. Mais il n'en est pas ainsi des parties de la Matiere simple & solide. Et même dans les Composez, il n'est pas impos-sible que Dieu fasse deux Goutes d'eau tout-à-fait semblables; & nonobstant cette parfaite ressemblance, elles ne pourroient pas devenir une seule & même Goute d'eau.

T' ajoute

from the Nature of Things, or the Perfections of God.

2, and 4. This Argument, if it was True, would prove that God neither bas created. nor * can possibly create any Matter at all. * See Ap-For the perfectly folid parts of all Matter, pendix, No. 9, if you take them of equal Figure and Di- and 4. mensions (which is always possible in Supposition,) are exactly alike; and therefore it would be perfectly indifferent if they were transposed in Place; and consequently it was impossible (according to this Learned Author's Argument,) for God to place them in those Places wherein he did actually place them at the Creation, because he might as easily have transposed their Situation. 'Tis very true, that no two Leaves, and perhaps no two drops of Water are exactly alike; because they are Bodies very much compounded. But the case is very different in the parts of simple solid Matter. even in Compounds, there is no impossibility for God to make two drops of Water exactly alike. And if he should make them exactly alike, yet they would never the more become one and the same drop of Water, because they were alike. Nor would the Place of the One, be the Place of the Other; though it was absolutely indifferent, which was placed in which place.

224 Quatrième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

J'ajonte que le Lieu de l'une de ces Goutes ne seroit pas le Lieu de l'autre, quoique leur Situation fût une chose absolument indifferente. Le même Raisonnement a lieu aussi par rapport à la prémiere Détermination du Mouvement d'un certain coté,

ou du coté opposé.

5, & 6. Queique deux choses seient parfaitement semblables, elles ne cessent pas d' être deux choses. Les pareies du Temps font aussi parfaitement semblables, que celles de l'Espace; & cependant deux Instants ne font pas le même lustant: Ce ne sont pas non plus deux noms d'un seul & même Instant. Si Dieu n' avoit créé le Monde que dans ce moment, il n'auroit pas été orté dans le temps qu' il l'a été. Es si Dieu a donné, (ou s' il peut donner) une Etendue bornée à l'Univers, il s' enfuit que l'Univers doit être naturellement capable de mouvement; Car ce qui est borné, ne peut ôtre immobile. Il paroit donc par ce que je viens de dire, que ceux qui soutiennent que Dieu ne pouvoit pas créer le Monde dans un mare Temps, ou dans un autre Lieu; font la Matiere nécessairement infinie & éternelle. & rédrasent tout à la Necessité & au Destin.

7. Si l'Univers a une Etendue bornée, l'Espace qui est au delà du Monde, n' est point imaginaire, mais réel. Les Espaces vuides dans le Monde même no sont pas imagi-

The fame reasoning holds likewise concerts. ing the original determination of Motion this way or the contrary way.

s and 6. Two things, by being exacity elike. do not ceale to be Two. The parts of Time, are as exactly like to each other, as those of Space: Yet two Points of Time. are not the same Point of Time, nor are they two Names of only the same Point of Time. Had God created the World but This Moment, it would not have been encated at the Time it was created. And if God bas made (or can make) Matter Finite in Dimensions, the material Universe must consequently be in its Nature Moveable; For nothing that is finite, is immoveable. To say therefore that God could not have altered the Time or Place of the existence of Matter, is making Matter to be necessarily Infinite and Eternal, and reduging all things to Necessity and Fate.

7. Extra-mundane Space, (if the material World be Finite in its Dimensions,) is not imaginary, but real. Nor are void Spaces in the World, merely imaginary. In an * exhausted

imaginaires. Quoi qu' il y ait des rayons de Lumiere, & peut-être quelque autre matiere en trés-petite quantité, dans un * Recipient; le défaut de resistance fait voir clairement, que la plus grande partie de cet Espace est destituée de Matiere. Car la Subtilité de la matiere ne peut être la cause du défaut de Resistance. Le Mercure est composé de parties, qui ne sont pas moins Subtiles & Fluides que celles de l'Eau; & cependant il fait plus de dix fois autant de Resistance. Cette Resistance vient donc de la Quantité, & non de la Grossiereté de la Matiere.

8. L'Espace destitué de Corps, est une Proprieté d'une Substance immaterielle. L' Espace n'est pas borné par les Corps; mais il existe egalement dans les Corps & hors des Corps. L'Espace n'est pas rensermé entre les Corps; Mais les Corps, étant dans l'Espace immense, sont eux-mêmes bornez par leurs propres Dimensions.

9. L' Espace vuide n' est pas un Attribut sans Sujet; car, par cet Espace nous n' entendons pas un Espace où il n' y a rien, mais un Espace sans Corps. Dieu est certainement present dans tout l'Espace vuide; O peut-être qu' il y a aussi dans cet Espace

^{*} Un Passage de la Lettre de Mr. Leibnitz, qui servoit d'Envelope à son Ecrit, a donné lieu à ce que l'on die ici.

* exhausted Receiver, though Rays of Light, and perhaps some Other Matter, be There in an exceeding small Quantity; yet the want of Resistence plainly shows, that the greatest part of That Space is void of Matter. For Subtleness or Fineness of Matter, cannot be the cause of want of Resistence. Quick-silver is as subtle, and consists of as sine parts and as stud, as Water; and yet makes more than ten times the resistence: Which resistence arises therefore from the Quantity, and not from the Grossness of the Matter.

- 8. Space void of Body, is the Property of an incorporeal Substance. Space is not Bounded by Bodies, but exists equally within and without Bodies. Space is not inclosed between Bodies; but Bodies, existing in unbounded Space, are, themselves only, terminated by their own Dimensions.
- 9. Void Space, is not an Attribute without a Subject; because, by void Space, we never mean Space void of every thing, but void of Body only. In All void Space, God is certainly present, and possibly many other Substances which are not Matter;

^{*} This was occasioned by a Passage in the Private Letter, wherein Mr. Leibnitz's Paper came inclosed.

plusieurs autres Substances, qui ne sont pas materielles, & qui par conséquent ne peuvent être tangibles, ni apperçues par aucun

de nos sens.

10. L'Espace n'est pas une Substance, mais un Attribut; & si c'est un Attribut d'un Etre nécessaire, il doit (comme tous les autres Attributs d'un Etre nécessaire) exister plus nécessairement, que les Substances mêmes, qui ne sont pas nécessaires. L'Espace est immense, immuable, & éternel; & l'on doit dire la même chose de la Durée. Mais il ne s'ensuit pas de la, qu'il y ait rien d'éternel hors de Dieu. Car l'Espace & la Durée ne sont pas hors de Dieu: Ce sont * des suites immédiates & nécessaires de son Existence, sans lesquelles

^{*} Dem aternus est, &c. C' est-à dire: Dieu est Eternel & Infini, il est Tout-puissant, & rien n' échape à sa connoissance; je veux dire, que sa durée n' a ni commencement, ni fin ; & que sa Presence est immense, & n' apoint des bornes: Qu' il régle toutes les choses qui existent. & qu'il connoir tout ce qu'il est possible de connoitre. Il n' est pas l' eternité ou l' Infinité; mais il est Eternel & Infini. Il n'est pas la Durée, ou l' Espate; mais il continue d'exister, & il est present. Il existe toujours, & il est present par tout; & en existant toujours & par tout, il constitue la Durée & l' Espace, l' Eternité & l' Infinité. Certainement, puisque chaque particule de l'Espace existe tonjours, & que chaque Moment indivisible de la Durée est par tout, on ne peut pas dire du Maitre & du Seige. neur de toutes choses, qu' il n'existe ni en aucun temps, ni en ausun lieu. Il est present par tout, non seulement Virtuellement.

being neither Tangible, nor Objects of Any of Our Senses.

perty; And if it be a Property of That which is necessary, it will consequently (as all other Properties of That which is necessary must do,) exist more necessarily, (though it be not itself a Substance,) than those Substances Themselves which are not necessary. Space is immense, and immutable, and eternal; and so also is Duration. Yet it does not at all from hence follow, that any thing is eternal bors de Dieu. For Space and Duration are not bors de Dieu, but * are caused by, and are immediate and necessary.

^{*} Deus Æternus est & Infinitus, Omnipotens & Omnisciens; id est, durat ab æterno in æternum, & adest ab infinito in infinitum; omnia regit & omnia cognoscit, quæ fiuntiaut sciri possunt. Non est Aternitas vel Infinitas, sed Aternus & Infinitus; non est Duratio vel Spatium, sed durat & adefi-Durat, Semper, & Adest Ubique; & existendo semper & ubique, Durationem & Spatium, Rternitatem & infinitatemi constituit. Cum unaquæq; Spatij particula sit semper, & unumquodq; Durationis indivisibile momentum Ubique'; certé rerum omnium Fabricator ac Dominus, non erit nunquam nusquam. Omnipræsens est, non per Virtutem solam, 1ed etiam per Substantiam: Nam Virtus sine Substantia subfistere non potest. i. e. God is Eternal and Infinite, Omnipotent and Omniscient: That is, he endures from Everlasting to Everlasting, and is present from Infinity to Infinity: He governs all things which are, and knows all things

130 Quatrième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

quelles il ne seroit point Eternel & present
par tout.

11. & 12. Les Infinis ne sont composez de Finis, que comme les Finis sent composez d'Infinitesimes. J' ai fait voir ci-dessus, (§ 3. de ma 3 Réplique,) en quel sens on peut dire que l'Espace a des parties, ou qu' il n' en a pas. Les parties, dans le sens que l'on donne à ce mot lors qu' on l'applique aux Corps, sont separables, composées. desunies, indépendantes les unes des autres, & capables de mouvement. Mais quoique l' Îmagination puisse en quelque maniere concevoir des parties dans l'Espace infini; cependant, comme ces parties, improprement ainsi dites, sont essentiellement immobiles & inseparables les unes des autres, (Voiez ci-dessus, Réplique II, § 4. O Réplique III, § 3.) il s' ensuit que cet Espace est essentiellement simple, & absolument indivisible.

Virtuellement, mais encore Substantiellement: Car la puissance [virtus] ne sçauroit subsister sans une Substance. Newtoni Principia, Schol. generale sub finem.

fary Consequences of His Existence. And without them, his Eternity and Ubiquity [or Omnipresence] would be taken away.

11, and 12. Infinites are composed of Finites, in no other sense, than as Finites are composed of infinitesimals. In what sense Space has or has not Parts, has been explained before, Reply 3d, § 3. Parts, in the corporeal Sense of the Word, are separable, compounded, ununited, independent on, and moveable from each other: But infinite Space, though it may by Us be partially apprehended, that is, may in our Imagination be conceived as composed of Parts; yet Those Parts (improperly so called) being effentially indifcerpible and immoveable from each other, and not partable without an express Contradiction in Terms. [See above, Reply II, § 4. and Reply III, § 3;] Space consequently is in itself essentially One, and absolutely indivisible.

things which are possible to be known. He is not Eternity or Infinity, but Eternal and Infinite. He is not Duration, or Space; but he endures, and is Present. He endures Always, and is Present every where; and, by existing always and every where, constitutes Duration and Space, Eternity and Infinity. Seeing every particle of Space is Always, and every indivisible Moment of Duration is every where; surely it cannot be said of the Maker and Lord of all things, that he is at no Time, and in no Place, Never and No-where. He is Omnipresent, not only Virtually, but Substantially: For Power cannot subsist without a Substance. Newtoni Principia, Schol. generale substance.

13. Si le Monde a une Etendue bornée; il peut être mis en mouvement par la puissance de Dieu; & par consequent l' Argument que je fonde sur cette Mobilité, est une preuve concluante. Quoique deux Lieux soient parfaitement semblables, ils ne sont pas un seul & même Lieu. Le Mouvement ou le Repos de l'Univers, n' est pas non plus le * même Etat; comme le Mouvement ou le Repos d' un Vaisseau, n' est pas le même Etat, parce qu' un homme renfermé dans la Cabane ne sçauroit s'appercevoir si le Vaisseau fait voile ou non, pendant que son mouvement est uniforme. Quorque cet homme ne s' apperçoive pas du mouvement du Vaisseau, ce mouvement ne laisse pas d' être un Etat réel & different, & il produit des Effets réels & differens ; & s' il étoit arrêté tout d' un coup, il auroit d' autres effets réels. Il en seroit de même d'un mouvement imperceptible de l' Univers. On n' a point répondu à cet Argument; sur lequel Mr. le Chevalier Newton insiste beaucoup dans ses Principes Mathematiques. Aprez avoir consideré (dans sa Definition 8.) les Proprietez, les Causes, & les Effets du Mouvement; cette consideration lui sert à faire voir la difference qu' il y a entre le mouvement réel, ou le transport d'un Corps qui passe d'une partie de l'Espace dans une autre; & le Mouvement rélatif, qui n' est qu' un changement de l' Ordre ou de

la

* Voïez
l' Appendice,
N° 10.

13. If the World be Finite in Dimensions, it is moveable by the Power of God; and therefore my Argument drawn from that moveableness, is conclusive. Two places, though exactly alike, are not the same place. Nor is the Motion or Rest of the Universe, the * same State; any more than the Mo- + See Abtion or Rest of a Ship, is the same State, pendix, because a Man shut up in the Cabbin cannot perceive whether the Ship fails or not, so long as it moves uniformly. Motion of the Ship, though the Man perceives it not, is a real different State, and has real different Effects; and, upon a fudden stop, it would have Other real Effects; And so likewise would an indiscernable Motion of the *Universe*. To This Argument, no Answer has ever been given. largely infifted on by Sir Isaac Newton in his Mathematical Principles, (Definit. 8.) where, from the Consideration of the Properties, Causes, and Effects of Motion, he shows the difference between real Motion. or a Bodie's being carried from one part of Space to another; and relative Motion. which is merely a change of the Order or Situation of Bodies with respect to each other. This Argument is a Mathematical one; showing, from real Effects, that there may be real Motion where there is none relative; and relative Motion, where there is nane

la Situation des Corps entre eux. C'est un Argument Mathematique, qui prouve par des Essets réels, qu'il peut y avoir un mouvement réel, où il n' y en a point de rélatif; e qu'il peut y avoir un mouvement rélatif, où il n' y en a point de réel: C'est, dis-je, un Argument Mathematique, auquel on ne répond pas, quand on se contente d'assurer le contraire.

14. La réalité de l'Espace n'est pas une simple Supposition: Elle a été prouvée par les Arguments rapportez ci-dessus, auxquels on n'a point répondu. L'Auteur n'a pas répondu non plus à un autre Argument, sçavoir, que l'Espace & le Temps sont des Quantitez; ce qu'on ne peut dire de la Situation & de l'Ordre.

I 5. Il n'étoit pas impossible que Dieu sit le Monde plûtôt ou plus tard, qu'il ne l'a fait. Il n'est pas impossible non plus, qu'il le détruise plûtôt ou plus tard, qu'il ne sera actuellement détruit. Quant à la doctrine de l'Eternité du Monde; ceux qui supposent que la Matiere & l'Espace sont la même chose, doivent supposer que le Monde est non seulement infini & éternel, mais encore que son immensité & son éternité sont nécessaires, & même aussi nécessaires que l'Espace & la Durée, qui ne dépendent pas de la Volonté de Dieu, mais * Voicz de son * Existence. Au contraire, ceux qui la Notesur croyent que Dieu a créé la Matiere en telle \$10. quantité, en tel temps, & en tels Espaces

gu' il

none real: And is not to be answered, by barely afferting the contrary.

14. The reality of Space is not a Supposition, but is proved by the fore-going Arguments, to which no Answer has been Nor is any Answer given to That other Argument, that Space and Time are Quantities, which Situation and Order are not.

15. It was no impossibility for God to make the World fooner or later than he did: Nor is it at all impossible for him to destroy it sooner or later than it shall actually be destroyed. As to the Notion of the World's Eternity; They who suppose Matter and Space to be the same, must indeed suppose the World to be not only Infinite and Eternal, but necessarily so; even as necessarily as Space and Duration, which depend not on the Will, but on the * Existence of *See above, But they who believe that God the Note created Matter in what Quantity, and at what particular Time, and in what particular Spaces he pleased, are here under no difficulty. For the Wildom of God may have very good reasons for creating This World.

qu' il lui a plu, ne se trouvent embarassez d' aucune difficulté. Car la Sagesse de Dieu peut avoir eu de très-bonnes raisons pour créer Ce Monde dans un certain temps: elle peut avoir fait d'autres choses avant que Ce Monde sût créé; & elle peut faire d'autres choses aprez que Ce Monde sera détruit.

16, & 17. J' ai prouvé ci-dessus, (Voiez ma Troisième Réplique § 4, & la 13, de cette Quatrième Réplique,) que l'Espace & le Temps ne sont pas l'Ordre des choses, mais des Quantitez réelles; ce qu' on ne peut dire de l'Ordre & de la Situation. Le sçavant Auteur n' a pas encore répondu à ces Preuves; &, à moins qu'il n'y réponde, ce qu'il dit, est une Contradiction, comme il l'avouë lui-même ici.

18. L'Uniformité de toutes les parties de l' Espace, ne prouve pas que Dieu ne puisse agir dans aucune partie de l'Espace, de la maniere qu' il le veut. Dieu peut avoir de bonnes raisons pour créer des Etres finis; & des Etres finis ne peuvent exister qu' en des Lieux particuliers. Et comme tous les Lieux sont originairement semblables, (quand même le Lieu ne seroit que la Situation des Corps;) si Dieu place un Cube de matiere derriere un autre Cube egal de matiere, plutôt qu' à rebours, ce choix n' est pas indigne des Persections de Dieu, quoique ces deux Situations soient parfaitement semblables; parce qu' il peut y avoir

ď

at That particular Time he did; and may have made other kinds of things Before this material World began, and may make other kinds of things After This World is defroyed.

not the mere Order of things, but real Quantities, (which Order and Situation are not;) has been proved above, (See Third Reply, § 4; and in This Paper, § 13,) and no Answer yet given to those Proofs. And till an Answer be given to those Proofs, this learned Author's affertion is (by his own Confession in this place) a Contradiction.

18. The Uniformity of all the parts of Space, is no Argument against God's acting in Any part, after what manner he pleases. God may have good reasons to create finite Beings, and Finite Beings can be but in particular Places. And, all places being originally alike, (even though Place were nothing else but the Situation of Bodies;) God's placing one cube of matter behind another equal cube of matter, rather than the other behind That; is a choice no way unworthy of the Perfections of God, though Both these Situations be perfectly equal: Because there may be very good reasons why Both the Cubes should exist, and

y avoir de très-bonnes raisons pour l'exifience de ces deux Cubes, & qu'ils ne sçauroient exister que dans l'une ou l'autre de ces deux Situations également raisonnables. Le hazard d'Epicure n'est pas un Choix, mais une Nécessité aveugle.

19. Si l'Argument que l'on trouve ici, prouve quelque chose, il prouve, (comme je l'ai déja dit ci-dessus § 3.) que Dieu n'a * créé, & même qu'il ne peut créer aucune matière; parce que la Situation des parties égales & similaires de la Matière, étoit necessairement indifferente dés le commencement; aussi bien que la prémière Détermination de leur mouvement, d'un certain coté, ou du eoté opposé.

20. Je ne comprends point ce que l' Auteur veut prouver ici, par rapport au sujet

dont il s' agit.

Appen-

dice,N^ 4, & 9.

21. Dire que Dieu ne peut donner des bornes à la Quantité de la Matiere, c'est avancer une chose d'une trop grande Importance, pour l'admettre sans preuve. Et st Dieu ne peut non plus donner des bornes à la Durée de la Matiere, il s'ensuivra que le Monde est insini & éternel nécessairement & indépendamment de Dieu.

22, & 23. Si l'Argument que l'on trouve ici, étoit bien fondé, il prouveroit que Dieu ne sçauroit s' empêcher de faire tout ce qu'il peut faire; & par conséquent qu'il ne sçauroit s' empêcher de rendre toutes les

Créatures

and they cannot exist but in one or other of equally reasonable Situations. The Epicurean Chance, is not a Choice of Will, but a blind Necessity of Fate.

19. This Argument, (as I now observed, 3,) if it proves any thing, proves that God neither * did nor can create any mat- * See Apter at all; because the Situation of equal pendix, and similar parts of matter, could not but No. 4, be originally indifferent: As was also the original Determination of their Motions, this way, or the contrary way,

20. What This tends to prove, with regard to the Argument before us; I understand not.

21. That God Cannot limit the Quantity of Matter, is an Assertion of too great consequence, to be admitted without Proof. If he cannot limit the Duration of it neither. then the material World is both infinite and eternal necessarily and independently upon God.

22, and 23. This Argument, if it were good, would prove that Whatever God can do, he cannot but do; and consequently that he cannot but make every thing infinite, and every thing eternal. Which is making

him

Créatures infinies & éternelles. Mais, selon cette Dostrine, Dieu ne seroit point le Gouverneur du Monde: il seroit un Agent nécessaire; c'est-à-dire qu'il ne seroit pas même un Agent, mais le Destin, la Nature, & la Nécessité.

24. — 28. On revient encore ici à l'usage du mot de Sensorium, quoique Mr. Newton se soit servi d'un Correctif, lors qu'il a employé ce mot. Il n'est pas nécessaire de rien ajouter à ce que j'ai dit sur cela. Voiez ma Troisième Réplique, \$ 10. la Séconde, § 3. la Premiere § 3.

29. L'Espace est le Lieu de toutes les Choses & de toutes les Idées: Comme la Durée est la Durée de toutes les Choses, & de toutes les Idées. J' ai fait voir ci-dessus (Réplique II. § 12.) que cette Doctrine ne tend point à faire Dieu l'Ame du Monde. Il n' y a point d'Union entre Dieu & le Monde. On pourroit dire avec plus de raison, que l'Esprit de l' bomme est l'Ame des Images des choses qu' il apperçoit, qu' on ne peut dire que Dieu est l' Ame du Monde. dans lequel il est present par tout, & sur lequel il agit comme il veut, sans que le Monde agisse sur lui. | Nonobstant cette Réponse, qu' on a vû ci-dessus, (Réplique II. § 12.) l'Auteur ne laisse pas de répeter la même Objection plus d'une fois, comme si on n' y avoit point répondu.

30. Je

him no Governor at all, but a mere necessary Agent, that is, indeed no Agent at all, but mere Fate and Nature and Necessity.

24, — 28. Concerning the Use of the word, Sensory; (though Sir Isaac Newton says only, as it were the Sensory;) enough has been said in my Third Reply, \$ 10; and Second Reply, \$ 3; and First Reply, \$ 3.

29. Space is the Place of All Things. and of All Ideas: Just as Duration is the Duration of All Things, and of All Ideas. That This has no Tendency to make God the Soul of the World, See above, Reply II. S 12. There is no Union between God and The Mind of Man might with the World. greater propriety be stilled The Soul of the Images of things which it perceives, than God can be stiled the Soul of the World, to which he is present throughout, and acts upon it as he pleases, without being acted upon by it. Though this Answer was given before, (Reply II, § 12.) yet the same Objection is repeated again and again, without taking any Notice of the Answer.

*Voicz l' veut dire par * un Principe répresentatif.
Appendice, N°11. L' Ame apperçoit les choses, parce que les
Images des choses lui sont portées par les
Organes des Sens. Dieu apperçoit les choses,
parce qu' il est present dans les Substances
des choses mêmes. Il ne les apperçoit pas,
en les produisant continuellement; (car il
se repose de l'Ouvrage de la Création;)
mais il les apperçoit, parce qu' il est continuellement present dans toutes les choses
qu' il a créées.

† Voïez l' Appendice, N° 5.

31. Si l'Ame † n'agissoit point sur le Corps; & si le Corps, par un simple mouvement méchanique de la Matiere, se conformoit pourtant à la volonté de l'Ame dans une varieté infinie de mouvemens spontanées, ce seroit un Miracle perpetuel. L'Harmonie préétablie n'est qu' un mot, ou un terme d'Art; & elle n'est d'aucun usage pour expliquer la cause d'un esset si miraculeux.

32. Supposer que dans le mouvement spontanée du Corps, l'Ame ne donne point un nouveau mouvement ou une nouvelle Impression à la Matiere, & que tous les mouvemens spontanées sont produits par une impulsion méchanique de la Matiere; c'est reduire tout au Destin & à la Nécessité. Mais quand on dit que Dieu agit dans le Monde sur toutes les Créatures comme il le veut, sans aucune Union, & sans qu'aucune

Principle, I understand not. The Soul dispendix, cerns things, by having the Images of things conveyed to it through the Organs of Sense:

God discerns things, by being present to and in the Substances of the Things themselves. Not by producing them continually; (For he rests now from his work of Creation:) but by being continually omnipresent to every thing which he created at the Beginning.

31. That the Soul † should not operate † See Apupon the Body; and yet the Body, by pendix, mere mechanical impulse of Matter, conform itself to the Will of the Soul in all the infinite variety of spontaneous Animal-Motion; is a perpetual Miracle. Pre-established Harmony, is a mere Word or Term of Art, and does nothing towards explaining the cause of so miraculous an essential.

32. To suppose that in spontaneous Animal-Motion, the Soul gives no new Motion or Impression to Matter; but that all spontaneous Animal-Motion is performed by mechanical impulse of Matter; is reducing all things to mere Fate and Necessity. God's acting in the World upon every thing, after what manner he pleases, without any Union, and without being acted upon by any thing; shows plainly the difference

aucune chose agisse sur lui; cela fait voir évilemment la difference qu' il y a entre un Gouverneur qui est present par tout, & une

Ame imaginaire du Monde.

33. Toute Action consiste à donner une nouvelle Force aux choses, sur lesquelles elle s'exerce. Sans cela, ce ne servit pas une Action réelle, mais une simple Passion, comme dans toutes les Loix méchaniques du mouvement. D'où il s'ensuit que si la communication d'une nouvelle Force est surnaturelle, toutes les actions de Dieu seront surnaturelles, & il sera entierement exclu du Gouvernement du Monde. Il s'ensuit aussi de là, que toutes les actions des hommes sont surnaturelles, ou que l'homme est une pure Machine, comme une Horloge.

34, & 35. On a fait voir ci-dessus la difference qu' il y a entre la véritable Idée de Dieu, & celle d' une Ame du Monde. Voiez ma Seconde Réplique, § 12; & dans cette Quatriéme Réplique, § 29 &

§ 32.

36. Fai répondu ci-dessus, § 31. à ce que l'on trouve ici.

37. L' Ame n' est pas repandue dans le Cerveau; mais elle est presente dans le Lieu,

qui est le Sensorium.

38. Ce que l'on dit ici; est une simple Assirmation sans preuve. Deux Corps, dessituez d'Elasticité, se rencontrant avec des forces contraires & égales, perdent leur

difference between an Omnipresent Governor, and an imaginary Soul of the World.

33. Every Action is (in the nature of things) the giving of a new Force to the thing acted upon. Otherwise 'tis not really Action, but mere passiveness; as in the case of all mechanical and inanimate communications of Motion. If therefore the Giving a new Force, be supernatural; then every action of Gods supernatural, and he is quite excluded from the Government of the natural World: And every action of Man, is either supernatural, or else Man is as mere a Machine as a Clock.

34, and 35. The difference between the true Notion of God, and that of a Soul of the World, has been before shown: Reply II, § 12. and in This Paper, § 29 and 32.

36. This has been answered just above,

S AI.

37. The Soul is not diffused through the Brain; but is present to That particu-

lar Place, which is the Sensorium.

38. This is a bare Assertion, without Proof. Two Bodies, void of Elasticity, meeting each other with equal contrary Forces, Both lose their Motion. And Sir Isaac Newton

leur Mouvement. Et Mr. le Chevalier Newton a donné un Exemple Mathematique, (pag. 341, de l' Edition Latine de son Optique,) par lequel il paroit que le Mouvement diminue & augmente continuellement én Quantité, sans qu'il soit communiqué à d'autres Corps.

39. Le Sujet, dont on parle ici, n' est point un défaut, comme l'Auteur le suppose : C'est la véritable nature de la Matiere

inactive.

40. Si l'Argument que l'on trouve ici, est bien fondé, il prouve que l'Univers doit être infini; qu'il a existé de toute éternité, or qu'il ne sçauroit cesser d'exister; que Dieu a toûjours créé autant d'hommes, or d'autres Etres, qu'il étoit possible qu'il en créât; or qu'il les a créez pour les faire exister aussi long temps, qu'il lui étoit possible.

41. Je n'entends point ce que ces mots veulent dire: Un Ordre, (ou une Situation,) qui rend les Corps situables. Il me semble que cela veut dire, que la Situation est la cause de la Situation. J'ai prouvé ci-dessus (Réplique III, § 2 & 4.) que l'Espace n'est pas l'Ordre des Corps: Et j'ai fait voir dans cette Quatrième Réplique, § 13 & 14, que l'Auteur n'a point répondu aux Arguments que j'ai proposé. Il n'est pas moins évident, que le Temps n'est pas l'Ordre des choses qui succedent l'une à l'autre; puisque la Quantité du Temps peut être

Newton has given a Mathematical Instance, (page 341, of the Latin Edition of his Opticks,) wherein Motion is continually diminishing and increasing in Quantity, without any communication thereof to other Bodies.

- 39. This is no Defect, as is here supposed; but 'tis the just and proper Nature of inert Matter.
- 40. This Argument (if it be good,) proves that the Material World must be infinite, and that it must have been from eternity, and must continue to eternity: And that God must Always have created as many Men, and as many of all other things, as 'twas possible for him to create; and for as long a time also, as it was possible for him to do it.
- 41. What the meaning of these Words is; An Order, (or Situation,) which makes Bodies to be Situable; I understand not. It seems to me to amount to This, that Situation is the cause of Situation. That Space is not merely the Order of Bodies, has been shown before; Reply III, \$2 and 4. And that no Answer has been given to the Arguments there offered, has been shown in This Paper, \$13 and 14. Also that Time is not merely the Order of things succeeding each other, is evident; because the Quantity of Time may be greater or less.

être plus grande ou plus petite, & cependant Cet Ordre ne laisse pas d'être le même. L'Ordre des choses qui succedent l'une à l'autre dans le Temps, n'est pas le Temps même: Car elles peuvent succeder l'une à l'autre plus vîte ou plus lentement dans le même Ordre de Succession, mais non dans le même Temps. Supposé qu'il n'y eut point de Créatures, l'Ubiquité de Dieu, & la Continuation de son Existence, seroient † que l'Espace & la Durée seroient précisement les mêmes qu'à present.

* Voïcz ci-deflus la Note fur § 10.

42. On appelle ici de la Raison à l'Opinion vulgaire. Mais comme l'Opinion vulgaire n'est pas la Régle de la Vérité, les Philosophes ne doivent point y avoir recours.

43. L' idée d'un Miracle renferme nécessairement l' idée d'une chose rare & extraordinaire. Car, d'ailleurs, il n' y a rien de plus merveilleux, & qui demande une plus grande puissance, que quelques unes des choses que nous appellons naturelles; comme, par exemple, les Mouvemens des Corps Celestes, la Géneration & la Formation des Plantes & des Animaux, &c. Cependant ce ne sont pas des Miracles, parce que ce sont des choses communes. ensuit pourtant pas de là, que tout ce qui est rare & extraordinaire, soit un Miracle Car plusieurs choses de cette nature, peuvent étre des Effets irreguliers & moins communs, des Causes ordinaires; comme les Eclipses, les Monstres, la Manie dans les hommes,

less, and yet That Order continue the same. The Order of things succeeding each other in Time, is not Time itself: For they may succeed each other faster or slower in the fame Order of Succession, but not in the same Time. If no Creatures existed, yet the Ubiquity of God, and the Continuance of bis Existence, would make * Space and Duration to be exactly the same as they above, are Now.

on § 10.

42. This is appealing from Reason to vulgar Opinion; which Philosophers should not do, because it is not the Rule of Truth.

43. Unufualness is necessarily included in the Notion of a Miracle. For otherwise there is nothing more wonderful, nor that requires greater Power to effect, than some of those things we call natural. Such as, the Motions of the Heavenly-Bodies, the Generation and Formation of Plants and Animals, &c. Yet these are for This only reason not Miracles, because they are common. Nevertheless, it does not follow, that every thing which is unufual, is therefore a Miracle. For it may be only the irregular and more rare effect of usual Causes: Of which kind are Eclipses, Monstrous Births, Madness in Men, and innumerable L 3

hommes, & une infinité d'autres choses que

le Vulgaire appelle des Prodiges.

44. On accorde ici ce que j' ai dit. On foutient pourtant une chose contraire au sentiment commun des Théologiens, en supposant qu' un Ange peut faire des Miracles.

45. Il est vrai que si un Corps en atti-

45. Il est vrai que si un Corps en attiroit un autre sans l'intervention d'aucun
moyen, ce ne seroit pas un Miracle, mais une
Contradiction; car ce seroit supposer qu'
une chose agit où elle n'est pas. Mais le
Moyen par lequel deux Corps s'attirent l'un
l'autre, peut être invisible & intangible,
& d'une nature differente du Méchanisme:
Ce qui n'empêche pas qu'une action réguliere & constante ne puisse être appellée naturelle; puis qu'elle est beaucoup moins
merveilleuse, que le mouvement des Animaux,
qui ne passe pour un Miracle,

46. Si par le terme de Forces naturelles, on entend ici des Forces Méchaniques; tous les Animaux, sans en excepter les hommes, seront de pures Machines, comme une Horloge. Mais si ce terme ne signifie pas des Forces Méchaniques; la Gravitation peut être produite par des Forces régulieres de naturelles, quoi qu'elles ne soient pas Ménaturelles, quoi qu'elles ne soient pas des soient pas d

chaniques.

N.B.On a dejà repondu ci-dessus aux Arguments que Mr. Leibnizz a inserez dans une Addition à son Quatrième Ecrit. La seule chose qu' il soit besoin d'observer ici, c' est que Mr. Leibnizz en soutenant l'impossibilité des Atomes Physques, (il ne s'agit pas entre nous des Points Mathematiques,) soutient

merable things which the Vulgar call Prodigies.

44. This is a Concession of what I alleged. And yet 'tis contrary to the common Opinion of Divines, to suppose that an

Angel can work a Miracle.

45. That One Body should attract another without any intermediate Means, is indeed not a Miracle, but a Contradiction: For 'tis supposing something to all where it is not. But the Means by which Two Bodies attract each other, may be invisible and intangible, and of a different nature from mechanism; and yet, acting regularly and constantly, may well be called natural; being much less wonderful than Animal-motion, which yet is never called a Miracle.

46. If the word, natural Forces, means here Mechanical; then all Animals, and even Men, are as mere Machines as a Clock. But if the word does not mean, mechanical Forces; then Gravitation may be effected by regular and natural Powers, though they be not Mechanical.

N. B. The Arguments alleged in the Postscript to Mr. Leibnitz's Fourth Paper, have been already answered in the foregoing Replies. All that needs here to be observed, is, that his Notion concerning the Impossibility of Physical Atomes, (for the Question is not about Mathematical Atomes,) is a manifest Absurdity. For either there are, or there are not any perfectly solid particles of Matter. If there are any such; then the parts of such perfectly solid particles, taken of

soutient une Absurdité maniseste. Car ou il y a des parties parfaitement solides dans la Matiere, ou il n' y en a pas. S' il y en a, & qu' en les subdivisant on y prenne de nouvelles particules, qui ayent toutes la même Figure & les mêmes Dimensions, (ce qui est toujours possible,) ces nouvelles particules seront des Atomes Physiques parfaitement semblables. Que s' il n' y a point des parties parfaitement solides dans la Matiere, il n' y a point de Matiere dans P Univers. Car plus on Divise & Subdivise un Corps, pour arriver enfin à des parties parfaitement solides & sans pores, plus la Proportion que les Pores ont à la matiere folide de ce Corps, plus, dis-je, cette Proportion augmente. Si donc, en poussant la Division & la Subdivision à l'infini, il est impossible d'arriver à des parties parfaitement solides & sans pores; il s' en suivra que les Corps sont uniquement composez de pores, (le rapport de ceux-ci aux parties solides, augmentantsans cesse;) & par consequent qu'il n' y a point de Mariere du tout: Ce qui est une Absurdité maniseste.



equal Figure and Dimensions, (which is always possible in Supposition,) are Physical Atoms perfectly alike. But if there be No such perfectly solid particles, then there is no Matter at all in the Universe. For, the further the Division and Subdivision of the parts of any Body is carried, before you arrive at parts perfectly solid and without pores; the greater is the Proportion of Pores to solid matter in That Body. If therefore, carrying on the Division in infinitum, you never arrive at parts perfectly solid and without Pores; it will follow that All Bodies consist of Pores only, without any Matter at all. Which is a manifest Absurdity.



Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ,

o u

Réponse au Quatriéme Ecrit Anglois.

[Les differentes Leçons, imprimées à la Marge de l'Ecrit suivant, sont des changemens faits de la propre main de Mr. Leibnitz dans une autre Copie de cet Ecrit, laquelle il envoya à un de ses amis en Angleterre peu de temps avant sa mort.]

Sur § 1 & 2, du Papier precedent.

1. JE répondray cette fois plus amplement, pour éclaircir les difficultés, & pour essayer si l'on est d'humeur à se payer de raison, & de donner des marques de l'amour de la verité, ou si l'on ne fera que chicaner sans rien éclaircir.

2. On s'efforce souvent à m'imputer la necessité & la fatalité, quoyque peut être personne n'ait mieux expliqué & plus à fond que j'ay fait dans la Theodicée, la veritable difference entre Liberté, Contingence, Spontaneité, d'un coté; & Necessité absolue, Hazard, Coastion, de l'autre. Je ne sais pas encore si on le fait parce qu'

Mr. LEIBNITZ's Fifth Paper.

BEING

An Answer to Dr. CLARKE's Fourth Reply.

To § 1 and 2, of the foregoing Paper.

I. I Shall at This Time make a larger Answer; to clear the difficulties; and to try whether the Author be willing to hearken to reason, and to show that he is a lover of truth; or whether he will only cavil, without clearing any thing.

2. He often endeavours to impute to me Necessity and Fatality; though perhaps no One has better and more fully explained, than I have done in my Theodicad, the true difference between Liberty, Contingency, Spontaneity, on the one Side; and absolute Necessity, Chance, Coastion, on the other. I know not yet, whether

156 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

on le veut, quoyque je puisse dire; ou si ces imputations viennent de bonne soy, de ce qu' on n' a point encore pesé mes sentimens: F' experimenteray bien tôt ce que j' en dois juger, & je me regleray là dessus.

- 3. Il est vray que les Raisons sont dans l'Esprit du Sage, & les Motifs dans quelque Esprit que ce soit, ce qui répond à l'esset que les Poids sont dans une Balance. On objecte, que cette notion mene à la Necessité & à la Fatalité. Mais on le dit sans le prouver; & sans prendre connoissance des Explications que j'ay données autres sois pour lever toutes les difficultés qu'on peut saire là dessus.
- 4. Il semble aussi, qu' on se joue d'équivoque. Il y a des Necessités, qu' il faut admettre. Car il faut distinguer entre une Necessité absolue & une Necessité Hypothetique. Il faut distinguer aussi entre une Necessité qui a lieu parceque l'opposé implique Contradiction, & laquelle est appellée Logique, Metaphysique, ou Mathematique; & entre une Necessité qui est Morale, qui fait que le sage choisit le Meilleur, & que tout esprit suit l'Inclination la plus grande.
- 5. La Necessité Hypothetique est celle, que la Supposition ou Hypothese de la prévision & préordination de Dieu impose aux futurs

the Author does this, because he will do it, whatever I may say; or whether he does it, (supposing him sincere in those imputations,) because he has not yet duly considered my Opinions. I shall soon find what I am to think of it, and I shall take

my measures accordingly.

of a Wife Being, and Motives in Any Mind whatsoever, do that which answers to the effect produced by Weights in * a Ba- * See Aplance. The Author objects, that this No-pendix, tion leads to Necessity and Fatality. But No. 3. he says so, without proving it, and without taking notice of the explications I have formerly given, in order to remove the difficulties that may be raised upon that Head.

4. He feems also to play with Equivocal Terms. There are Necessities, which ought to be admitted. For we must distinguish between an absolute and an Hypothetical Necessity. We must also distinguish between a Necessity, which takes place because the Opposite implies a Contradiction; (which necessity is called Logical, Metaphysical, or Mathematical;) and a Necessity which is Moral, whereby a Wise Being chuses the Best, and every Mind follows the strongest Inclination.

5. Hypothetical Necessity is that, which the Supposition or Hypothesis of God's Foresight and Pre-ordination lays upon fu-

:

ture

158 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

futurs contingens. Et il faut l'admettre si ce n'est qu'avec les Sociniens on resuse à Dieu la prescience des Contingens suturs, & la Providence qui regle & gouverne les

choses en detail.

6. Mais ny cette prescience ny cette Preordination ne derogent point à la Liberté.
Car Dieu porté par la Supreme Raison à
choisir, entre plusieurs suites des choses ou
Mondes possibles, celuy où les Creatures
libres prendroient telles ou telles Resolutions,
quoyque non sans son concours; a rendu,
par là, leur évenement certain & determiné
une fois pour toutes; sans deroger par là à
la Liberté de ces Creatures: Ce simple decret du choix, ne changeant point, mais
actualisant seulement leur Natures libres qu'
il y voyoit dans ses Idees.

7. Et quant à la Necessité Morale, elle ne deroge point non plus à la Liberté. Car lors que le sage, &, sur tout, Dieu, (le sage souverain,) choisit le Meilleur, il n'en est pas moins libre; au contraire, c'est la plus parfaite Liberté, de n'être point empeché d'agir le mieux. Et lors qu'un autre choisit selon le bien le plus apparent, & le plus inclinant; il imite en cela la Liberté du sage à proportion de sa disposition. Et sans cela, le choix seroit un bazard aveugle.

ture Contingents. And This must needs be admitted, unless we deny, as the Socinians do. God's Foreknowledge of future Contingents, and his Providence which regulates

and governs every particular thing.

6. But neither That Foreknowledge, nor That Pre-Ordination, derogate from Liber-For God, being moved by his Supreme Reason to chuse, among many Series of Things or Worlds possible. That, in which free Creatures should take such or fuch Resolutions, though not without his Concourse; has thereby rendred every Event certain and determined once for all: without derogating thereby from the Liberty of those Creatures: That simple decree of Choice, not at all changing, but only actualizing their free Natures, which he faw in his Ideas.

7. As for Moral Necessity, This also does not derogate from Liberty. For when a Wife Being, and especially God, who has Supreme Wildom, chuses what is Best, he is not the less free upon that account: On the contrary, it is the most perfect Liberty, not to be hindred from acting in the best manner. And when Any Other chuses according to the most apparent and the most strongly inclining Good, he imitates therein the Liberty of a truly Wise Being, -in proportion to his disposition. Without , this, the Choice would be a blind Chance.

160 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

8. Mais le bien, tant vray qu' apparent, en un mot le motif, incline sans necessiter; C'est à dire, sans imposer une Necessité absolue. Car lors que Dieu (pour exemple) choisit le Meilleur; ce qu'il ne choisit point, é qui est inferieur en Perfection, ne laisse pas d'être possible. Mais si ce que Dieu choisit, estoit absolument Necessaire, tout autre parti seroit impossible; contre l'Hypothese: Car Dieu choisit parmy les possibles, e'est à dire parmy plusieurs partis, dont pas

un n' implique Contradiction.

9. Mais de dire que Dieu ne peut choisir que le meilleur, & d' en vouloir inferer que ce qu' il ne choisit point, est impossible; est confondre les termes; la Puissance, & la Volonté; la Necessité Metaphysique, 📀 la Necessité Morale; les Essences, & les Existences. Car ce qui est necessaire, l'est par son Essence, puisque l'opposé implique Contradiction; mais le Contingent qui existe, doit son existence au principe du Meilleur, Raison suffisante des choses. Et c'est pour cela que je dis, que les Motifs inclinent sans necessiter; & qu'il y a une certitude & infallibilité, mais non pas une Necessité absolue dans les choses contingentes. Joignez à cecy, ce qui se dira plus bas, Nomb. 72 & 76.

10. Et j' ay assez montré dans ma Theodicée que cette Necessité Morale est beureuse, conforme à la persection Divine, conforme au grand 8. But Good, either true or apparent; in a word, the Motive, inclines without necessitating; that is, without imposing an absolute Neversity. For when God (for Instance,) chuses the Best; what he does not chuse, and is inferior in Persection, is nevertheless possible. But if what he chuses, was absolutely necessary; any other way would be impossible: Which is against the Hypothess. For God chuses among Possibles, that is, among many ways, Inone of which implies a Contradiction.

9. But to fay, that God can only chufe What is Belt and to infer from thence. that what he does not chuse, is impossible this, I say, is confounding of Terms : Tis blending Power and Will, Metaphysical Neceffity and Moral Necessity, Essences and Existences. For, what is nevessary, is id by its Effence, fince the Opposite implies a Contradiction; But a Contingent which exists, owes its Existence to the Principle. of what is Best, which is a sufficient Reafon for the Existence of Things. therefore I say, that Motives incline without necessificating; and that there is a Certainty and Infallibility, but not an absolute Necessity in contingent Things. Add to this, what will be faid hereafter, Numb. 73, and 76.

no. And I have sufficiently shown in my Theoditica, that this Moral Necessay is a good Thing, agreeable to the Divine Per-

A fection;

162 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LIBNITZ.

grand principe des Existences, qui est seluy du besoin d'une Raison sussisante; au lieu que la Necessité absolue & Metaphysique, depend de l'autre grand principe de nos raisonnemens, qui est celuy des Essences, c'est à dire celuy de l'Identité, ou de la Contradiction: Car ce qui est absolument Necessaire, est saul possible entre les partie, & son contraire implique Contradiction.

11. J'ay fait voir auss, que notre Volonté ne suit pas tonsjours precisement l' Entendement practique, parcequ' elle peut avoir ou trouver des raisons pour suspendre sa Resolution jusqu' à une discussion ulterieure.

12. M'imputer aprés cela une Necessité absolue, sans avoir rien à dire contre des Considerations que je viens d'apporter, & qui vont jusqu'au fond des choses, peut être au delà de ce qui se voit ailleurs; ce sera une obstination déraisonnable.

on m' impute aussi, s'est encore une Equivoque. Il y a fatum Mahometanum, fatum Stoicum, fatum Christianum. Le destin à la Turque, veut que les Essets arriveroient quand on en éviteroit la cause; comme s'il y avoit une Nesessité absolue. Le destin Stoicien veut qu' on soit tranquille, parce qu' il faut avoir patience par force, Section; agreeable to the great Principle or Ground of Existences, which is that of the Want of a sufficient Reason: Whereas Absolute and Metaphysical Necessity, depends upon the Other great Principle of our Reasonings, viz. that of Essences; that is, the Principle of Identity or Contradiction: For, what is absolutely necessary, is the only possible Way, and its contrary implies a Contradiction.

does not always exactly follow the Practical Understanding; because it may have or find Reasons to suspend its Resolution till a further Examination.

Sugar to be great in

Notion of an absolute Necessity, without having any thing to say against the Reasons which I have just now alledged, and which go to the Bottom of Things, perhaps beyond what is to be seen elsewhere; This, I say, will be an unreasonable Ob-

flinacy.

which the Author lays also to my Charge; this is another Ambiguity. There is a Fatum Mahometanum, a Fatum Stoicum, and a Fatum Christianum. The Turkish Fate will have an Effect to happen, even though its Cause should be avoided; as if there was an Absolute Necessity. The Stoical Fate will have a Man to be quiet, because he must

164 Cinquieme Edric del Mr. UEILNITZ.

force, puisqu' on ne souroit regamber contre la fuite des choses. Mois on convient que il y a fatum Christianum, une deffiner ceri taine de toutes choses, reglée par la Presence & par la Providence de Dieu. Patum eft derivé de fart, d' eft à dire, prononcer, decernor ; & dans le bon fens, il signifie le decret de la Providencet. Et ceux qui s' j fousmettent par la connoissance des Perfestions Divines, dons l'amour de Dian eft une suite, * ne prennent pas seulement patience comme les Philosophes Payens, mais ils sont même convents de ce que Dieu or donné, sachans qu' il factous hour le mieux, O non seulement porte le plus grand bien en general, mais encore pour le plus grand bien particulier de ceux qui l'aiment.

detruire une bonne fois les imputations mal fondées, comme j'espere de pouvoir saine par ces Explications dans le Blirt de Personnes équitables. Muintement je vientlant à une Objection qu' on me fait icy contre lu comparaison den Pouls d'une Balance avec les Motifs de la Volonte. On objecte que les Balance est purement pussue, est pousse par les Pouls de voluité sons actifs. A télà je reponds, que le Principe de Desoin d'une

ennoilance.

must have Patience whether he will or not, fince stis impossible to result the Course of Things. But 'tis agreed, that there is Fatum Christianum, a Certain Destiny of every Thing, regulated by the Foreknowledge and Providence of God. Fatum is derived from Fari; that is, to Pronounce, to Decree; and in its right Sense; it signifies the Decree of Providence. And those who submit to it through a Knowledge of the Divine Perfections, whereof the Love of God is a Confequence ; have not only Patience, like the Heathen Philosophers, but are also contented with what is ordained by God, knowing he does every thing for the best ; and not only for the greatest Good in general, but also for the greatest particular Good of those who love him.

14. I have been obliged to enlarge, in order to remove ill-grounded Imputations once for all; as I hope I shall be able to do by these Explications, so as to satisfy equitable Persons. I that now come to an Objection raised here, against my comparing the Weights of a Balance with the Motives of the Will. Tis objected, that a Balanco is merely Paffivo, and mov'd by the Weights; whereas Agents intelligent, and endowed with Will, are Active. To * See Appendix, No. this I answer, that the Principle of the 3.

Francis Command William

166 Cinquiente Berit de Mr. Leienutz.

Raison suffisante est sommun aux Agens & aux Patiens: Ils ont besoin d'une Raison suffisante de leur Action, aussi bien que de leur Passion. Non seulement la Balance n'agit pas, quand elle est poussée Egalement de part & d'autre; mais les Poids Egaux aussi n'agissent point quand ils sont en Equilibre, en sorte que l'un ne peut descendre sans que l'autre monte autant.

15. Il faut encore considerer qu' à proprement parler, les Motifs n'agissent point sur l'Esprit comme les Poids sur la Balance; mais c'est plútôt l'Esprit qui agit en vertu des Motifs, qui sont ses Dispositions à agir. Ainsi vouloir, comme l'on veut icy, que l' Esprit presere quelques sois les Motifs faibles aux plus forts, & même l'indifferent aux Motifs; c'est separer l'Esprit des Motifs, comme s' ils étoient hors de luy, comme le Poids est distingué de la Balance; & comme si dans l'Esprit il y avoit d'autres Dispositions pour agir que les Motifs, en vertu desquelles l'Esprit rejetteroit où accepteroit les Motifs. Au lieu que dans la verité les Motifs comprennent toutes les Dispositions que l'Esprit peut avoir pour agir volon-tairement; Car ils ne comprennent pas seulement les Raisons, mais encore les Inclinations qui viennent des Passions ou d'autres impressions precedentes. Ainsi si l'Esprit preservit l'Inclination soible à la sorte, il agiroit contre soy même, & autrement qu' il est disposé d'agir. Ca qui fait voir que leş ¥ ... غ

Want of a sufficient Reason is common both to Agents and Patient?: They want a sufficient Reason of their Action, as well as of their Passion. A Balance does not only not act, when it is equally pulled on both Sides; but the equal Weights likewise do not act when they are in an Aquilibrium, so that one of them cannot go down without the

others rising up as much.

15. It must also be considered, that, properly speaking, Motives do not act upon the Mind, as Weights do upon a Balance; but 'tis rather the Mind that acts by virtue of the Motives, which are its Dispositions. to act. And therefore to pretend, as the Author does here, that the Mind prefers sometimes weak Motives to strong ones, and. even that it prefers that which is indiffenent before Motives: This, I say, is to divide the Mind from the Motives, as if they were without the Mind, as the Weight - is distinct from the Balance; and as if the Mind had, besides Motiones, other Dispositions to act, by Virtue of which it could reject or accept the Motives. Whereas, in truth, the Motives comprehend all the Difpositions, which the Mind can have to act voluntarily; for they include not only the, Reasons, but also the Inclinations anding from Passions, or other preceding Impressons. Wherefore, if the Mind should prefer a weak Inclination to a strong one, it would act against it self, and otherwise M 4 than

Cinquiente Ecrit de Mr. LEIANTEZ.

les Notions contraires icy aux miennes, sont fuperficielles, Or se trouvent n' avoir rien de solide, quand elles font bien confiderées.

. 16. De dire aussi que l'Esprit peut avoir de bonnes Railons pour agir, quand il n' a aucuns Motifs, & quand les chifts font absolument indifferences, comme on s' explique icy; c'est une Contradiction manifeste. Car s'il a de bonnes Raisons pour le parti qui il prend, les choses ne luy sont point indifferentes:

17. Et de dire qu' on agina quand on a des Raisons pour agir, quandomeme les voyer d'agir seroient absolument indiffeventes; ciest encore parter fort superficiellement. O d' une mantere tres insouvenable. Gan on n' a jamais une Raithn suffishmte pour agir, quand on n'a: pas miffi ume Raison stiffishme pour agir tellement; toute action estant individuelle, & non generale my abstrite des ses Circonstances, on ayant besoin de quelque voye pour étre Effectues ... Donc quand il y a une Raison suffisante pour sgir tellement, il y en a aussi pour agir par une telle voye; & par confequent les voyes: no fant point indifferences. Foures les fois delion a des Raisons sufficientes pour une allibrifingaliere, on en a pour sex requifittes "Koyes encore ce qui se dina phis bus. New 66.

for a weak Indian in to a word at against a lift, and conswill

18. Ces

than it is disposed to act. Which shows that the Author's Motions, contrary to mine, are superficial, and appear to have no Solidity in them, when they are well considered.

ro, To affert also, that the Mind may baive good Rousons to act, when it has no Motives, and when Things are absolutely indifferent, as the Author explains himself here; this, I say, is a manifest Contradiction. For if the Mind has good Reasons for taking the Part it takes, then the Things

are not indifferent to the Mind.

17. And to affine that the Mind will act, when it has Reafons to act, even though the Ways of acting were absolutely indifferent: This, I say, is to speak again very suparficially, and in a manner that cannot be defended. For a Man never has a sufficient Reason to act, when he has not also a sufficient Reason to act in a certain particular manner; every Action being Individual, and not general, nor abstract from its Circumfances, but always needing fome particular way of being put in Execution. Wherefore, when there is a fufficient Reafor to do any particular Thing, there is allo a sufficient Reason to do min a certain particular manner; and confequently, feveral manners of doing it are not indifferent. As often as a Man has sufficient Reasons for a fingle Action, he has also sufficient Reafor all its Requisites. See also what I shall say below, Numb. 66. 18. These

179 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. Leienitz.

18. Ces raisonnemens sautent aux yeux ; & il est bien estrange de m'imputer que j'avance mon principe du besoin d'une Raison sufficient, sans aucune preuve tirée ou de la Nature des choses, ou des perfections. Divines. Car la nature des choses porte que tout évenement ait preallablement ses Conditions, Requisits, Dispositions convenables, dont l'existence en fait la Raison suffiante.

19. Et la perfection de Dieu demande que toutes ses actions forent conformes à sa sagesse, & qu' on ne puisse point luy reprocher d'avoir agi sans Raison, ou même d'avoir preseré une Raison plus foible à une Raison plus foible à une Raison plus forte.

20. Mais je parleray plus amplement sur la fin de ce papier, de la solidité & de l'importance de ce grand Principe du besoin d'une Raison sussitante pour tout évenement; dont le renversement renverseroit la meilleure partie de toute la Philosophie, Ainsi le est bien étrange qu' on veut igs qu' en cela je commets une Petition de Principe ; & il paroist bien qu' en veut soutenir des santimens insoutenables, puisqu' on est reduit à me resuser ce grand Principe, un des plus affectules de la Raison.

. The first state of the miles of the engineer of the engineer

18. These Arguments are very obvious; and 'tis very strange to charge me with advancing my Principle of the Want of a sufficient Reason, without any Proof drawn either from the Nature of Things, or from the Divine Perfections. For the Nature of Things requires, that every Event should have before-hand its proper Conditions, Requisites, and Dispositions, the Existence whereof makes the sufficient Reason of such Event.

all his Actions should be agreeable to his Wisdom; and that it may not be said of him, that he has afted without Reason; or even that he has prefer'd a weaker Reason before a stronger.

Conclusion of this Paper, concerning the Solidity and Importance of this great Principle, of the want of a sufficient Reason in order to every Event; the overthrowing of which Principle, would overthrow the best part of all Philosophy. Tis therefore very strange that the Author should say, I am herein guilty of a Petitio Principii; and it plainly appears he is desirous to maintain indefensible Opinions, since he is reduced to deny That great Principle, which is one of the most effential Principles of Reason.

Japan watawa Wasaka na mjara

412

172 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. Luidnitz.

y or Indo Livinger attending (f. 4T). Si Light his constant **Sur, Gramet** yn chiffog

: 21. Il finit avouse que ce grandReincipe, quorque il est été reconni; n'a post été affez employés. Et c'est en bonne partie la Raifan povirquoy jusque içe la Philosophie première d'été si peu feconde, & si per Dimanstrative. T' en infere lebtre suites con-sequences, qu' il n' y a point dans la Nature deux Etres réels absolus indiscernables; patmajue willy en avoit, Dien & la Nature adiroient fans Raison, en traitant l'un jautrement qua l'autre ; & qu' ainsi:Dieu ne produiApoint deux portions de matiere parfatantes égales est femblables al Ou ropond à cette Conclusion, sans en refuter le Raison de Griony nepond par una Objection blen nfaiblean Cer Argument (dition) will after bon, prouveroit, qu'il serois impossible a Dieu de créen aucune matiere. Gar les parties de la matiere parfaitement solides, estant prises égales & de la même. Figure, (ce qui est une Supposition possible,) derosent exactement; faites l'une comme l'autre. Mais d'est une Retition de principe arei manifasta, de supposir sette parsaite iconnanance, qui solon may no fourait étro admise. Cette Supposition de deux indiscensbles comunt da deuxi persiensi da medierroquiscont viennent parfaitement entre elles, parcoff post sible en termes abstraits; mais elle n'est paint compatible avec l'ordre des choses,

sh migra. To said 4. miles & in a confessed, that though this great Principle has been acknowledged, yet it has not been sufficiently made use of. Which is, in great measure, the Reason why the Prima Philosophia has that been Hitherto fo fruitful and demonstrative, as it should have been "I infer from that Principle, among other Confedurices, that there are not in Nature two real, absolute Beings, indifcernible from each other; because if there were, God and Nature would ad without Reason, in ordering the one otherwise than the other; and that therefore God does not produce Two Pieces of Matter perfectly equal and affect The Au that answers this Conclusion, without confuting the Reason of it; and he answers with a very weak Objection. That Areument, lays he, if it was good, would prove that it would be impossible for God to create any Matter at all. For, the perfectly folia Parts of Matter, if we take them of equal. Figure and Dimensions, (which is always, possible in Supposition,) would be exactly alike. But 'tis a manifest Petrid Principii to suppose That perfect Likeness, which, according to me, cannot be admitted. This Supposition of two Indiscernibles, such as two Pieces of Matter perfectly alike, feems indeed to be possible in abstracts Terms; but

74 Cinquiena Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

ny avec la sagesse Divine, où rien n'est admis sans Raison. Le vulgaire s' imagine de telles choses, parce qu'il se contente de Notions incompletes. Et s'est un des desauts des Atomisses.

22. Outre que je n'admets point dans la matiere des portions parfaitement solides, ou qui soyent tout d'une piece, sans aucune varieté ou mauvement particulier dans leur parties, comme l'on conçoit les pretendas Atomes. Poser de tels Corps, est encore une Opinion populaire mal fondée. Selon mes de monstrations, chaque portion de matiere est actuellement sous divisée en parties differemment nuies, et pas une ne ressemble entierement à l'autre.

23. Tavais allegué, que dans les chosessensibles om n'en trouve jamais deux indiscernables. O que (par exemple) on ne trouvera point deux senilles dans un jardin, ny deux gouttes d'eau parfaitement semblables. On l'admet à l'égard des seuilles, Opeut etre (perhaps) à l'égard des gouttes d' eau. Mais on pouvoit l'admettre sans balancer, ou sans perhaps, (senza forse, diroit un Italien,) ençore dans les gouttes d'eau.

24. Je crois que ces Observations generales qui se trouvent dans les choses sensibles, se trouvent encore à proportion dans les insensibles. Et qu' à cet egard on peut dire, comme

it is not confifient, with the Order of Things, nor with the Divine Wildom, by which nothing is admitted without Reason. The "Vulgar fancy such Things, because they content themselves with incomplete Notions. And this is one of the Faults of the Atomifts.

. 22. Besides; I don't admit in Matter, Parts perfectly Solid, or that are the same throughout, without any Variety or particular Motion in their Parts, as the pretended Atoms are imagined to be. To suppose fuch Bodies, is another popular Opinion illgrounded. According to my Demonstrations, every Part of Matter is actually subdivided into Parts differently moved, and no one of them is perfectly like another.

23. I faid, that in fensible Things, two. that are indiscernible from each other, can never be found; that (for Instance) two Leaves in a Garden; or two Drops; of Was ter, perfectly alike, are not to be found. The Author acknowledges it as to Leaves, and perhaps as to Drops of Water. But he might have admitted it, without any Helitation, without a perhaps, (an Italian would say, Senza Forse,) as to Drops of Water likewise.

1. 24. I believe that these general Observations in Things sensible, hold also in proportion in Things insensible; and that one may fay, in this Respect, what Har, lequin 1.63

Cinquiente Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

comme disoit Arlequin duns l'Empéreur d' la Lune, que c'oft tout comme ieys Et c'est un grand prejuge contre les indicarisbles, qu'on n'entrouvé du sun exemple. J' oppost & certe consequence, parce que (dit on) les Corps sensibles sont Composes, au lieu qu' on soutient qu' il y en a d' insenfibles out font Simples. Je reponds encore, que je n'en accorde point. Il n'y a rien de Simple selon moy, que les véritables Monades, que n' ont point de Parties ny d' Etendue. Les Corps Simples, et même les parfaitement similaires, font une suite de la fansse Position du Vülde & des Atomes, où d'ailleurs de la Philosophie paresseuse, qui ne pausse pas insez l'analyse des choses, o s' imagine de pouvoir parvoist nux premiers Elemens Corporels de la Nature, parceque cela contensation in office Imagination. 251 Quand je nie qu'il y ait deux gouttes d'enu entiment semblables, but deux autres Corps indiffernables; He ne dis point qu'il soit impossible absolument d'en poser, i mais que c'est vine chose contrusse à la Sagesse Divine i o i qui par confequent n' existe point. Var.

in good of Sung 3 Beref

26 f Woue que st deux choses parfaitement indiscernables existoient, elles sevoient Doux. Mais la Supposition est fails so, Geometaire au grand Principe de la raison.

lequin lays in the Emperor of the Moon; Tis there, just as 'tis here. And 'ris a great Objection against Indiscernibles, that no instance of them is to be found. But the Author oppoles this Confequence, because (fays he) fenfible Bodies are compounded: whereas he maintains there are instable Bodies, which are fimple. Lanswer again, that I don't admit sumple Bodies. nothing simple, in my Opinion, but true Monads, which have neither parts nor extention. Simple Bodies, and even perfectly limilar ones, are a confequence of the falle Hypothelis of a Vacuum and of Atoms, or of Lazy Philosophy, which does not fufficiently carry on the Analysis of things, and fancies it can attain to the first material Elements of Nature, because our Imagination would be therewith satisfied.

Drops of Water perfectly alike, or any two other Bodies Indiscernible from each other, I don't say, 'tis absolutely impossible to suppose them; but that 'tis a thing contrary to the divine Wisdom, and which conse-

quently does not exist.

To § 5 and 6.

26. I own, that if two things perfectly indiffernible from each other did exist, they would be Two; but That Supposition is falle, and contrary to the Grand Principle of

Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. Lei BNITZ. 178

Les Philosophes vulgaires se sont trompés lors qu' ils ont cra qu'il y avoit des choses differentes solo numero, ou seulement parce qu' elles sont Deux; & c'est de cette erreur que sont venues leurs perplexités sur ce qu' ils appelloient le principe d'individuation. La Metaphysique a été traitée ordinairement en simple Doctrine des Termes, comme un Distionnaire Philosophique, sans venir à la discussion des Choses. La Philosophie superficielle, comme celle des Atomistes & Vacuistes, se forge des choses que les raisons superieures n' admettent point. Fespere que mes Demonstrations feront changer de face d la Philosophie, malgré les foibles contra-dictions telles qu' on m' oppose icy.

27. Les Parties du Temps ou du Lieu, prises en elles mêmes, sont des choses Ideales ; ainsi elles se ressemblent parfaitement, comme deux Unités abstraites. Mais il n'en est pas de même de deux uns concrets, ou de deux Temps effectifs, ou de deux Espaces remplis, c'est à dire veritablement actuels.

28. Je ne dis pas que deux points de l' Espace sont un même point, ny que deux Instans du temps sont un même Instant, comme il semble qu' on m' impute: Mais on peut s' imaginer, faute de connoissance, qu'il y a Deux Instans differens, où il n' y en a qu' Un ; Comme j'ay remarque dans l' Article 17 de la precedente Reponse, que souvent en Geometrie on suppose Deux, pour representer l'erreur d'un contredisant, &

of Reason. The vulgar Philosophers were mistaken, when they believed that there are things different folo numero, or only because they are two; And from this error have arisen their perplexities about what they called the Principle of Individuation. Metaphysicks have generally been handled like a Science of mere Words, like a Philosophical Dictionary, without entring into the discussion of Things. Superficial Philosophy, such as is that of the Atomists and Vacuists, forges things, which superior Reasons do not admit. I hope My Demonstrations will change the Face of Philofophy, notwithstanding such weak Objections as the Author railes here against me.

27. The Parts of Time or Place, considered in themselves, are ideal things; and therefore they perfectly resemble one another, like two abstract Units. But it is not so with two concrete Ones, or with two real Times, or two Spaces silled up, that is,

truly actual.

28. I don't say that two Points of Space are one and the same point, nor that two Instants of Time are one and the same Instant, as the Author seems to charge me with saying. But a Man may fancy, for want of Knowledge, that there are two different Instants, where there is but one: In like manner as I observed in the 17th Paragraph of the foregoing Answer, that frequently in Geometry we suppose Two, in

180 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

on n'en trouve qu' Un. Si quel qu'un supposoit qu' une ligne droite coupe l'autre en deux points, il se trouvera au bout du compte, que ces deux points pretendus doivent coincider, & n' en sauroient faire qu' Un.

29. J'ay demontré que l'Espace n'est autre chose qu' un ordre de l' Existence des Choses, qui se remarque dans leur simultaneité. Ainsi la Fistion d' un Univers materiel fini, qui se promene tout entier dans un Espace vuide infini, ne sauroit étre admisse. Elle est tout à fait deraisonnable & Impracticable. Car outre qu'il n'y a point d' Espace réel bors de l'Univers materiel; une telle Action seroit sans but, ce seroit travailler sans rien faire, agendo nihil agere. Il ne se produiroit aucun changement observable par qui que ce soit. Če sont des Imaginations des Philosophes à Notions incompletes, qui se font de l' Espace une realité absolue. Les Simples Mathematiciens, qui ne s' occupent que de jeux de l' Imagi-nation, sont capables de se forger de telles Notions; mais elles sont detruites par des Raisons Superieures.

30. Absolument parlant, il paroist que Dieu peut faire l'Univers materiel sini en Extension; mais le contraire paroist plus con-

forme à sa Sagesse.

31. Je n'accorde point que tout fini est mobile. Selon l'Hypothese même des Adversaires, une Partie de l'Espace, quoyque finie, n'est

order to represent the error of a gainsayer, when there is really but One. If any Man should suppose that a right Line cuts another in two Points; it will be found after all, that those two pretended Points must co-incide, and make but One Point.

29. I have demonstrated, that Space is nothing else but an Order of the existence of things, observed as existing Together; And therefore the Fiction of a material finite Universe, moving forward in an infinite empty Space, * cannot be admitted. * See Ap-It is altogether unreasonable and impracti-pendix, cable. For, besides that there is no real No. 10. Space out of the material Universe; such an Action would be without any Design in it: It would be working without doing any thing, agendo nibil agere. would happen no Change, which could be observed by Any Person whatsoever. These are Imaginations of Philosophers who have incomplete notions, who make Space an abfolute Reality. Mere Mathematicians, who are only taken up with the Conceits of Imagination, are apt to forge such Notions; but they are destroyed by superior Reasons.

30. Absolutely speaking, it appears that God can make the material Universe finite in Extension; but the contrary appears more agreeable to his Wildom.

31. I don't grant, that every Finite is moveable. According to the Hypothesis of my Adversaries themselves, a part of Space, though N 2

182 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

n'est point mobile. Il faut que ce qui est mobile, puisse changer de Situation par rapport à quelque autre chose, & qu'il puisse arriver un Etat nouveau discernable du premier: Autrement le changement est une sistion. Ainsi il faut qu' un sini mobile fasse partie d' un autre, asin qu'il puisse arriver un changement observable.

32. Des Cartes a soutenu que la Matiere n'a point de bornes, & je ne crois pas qu' on l'ait suffisamment refuté. Et quand on le luy accorderoit, il ne s'ensuit point, que la Matiere seroit necessaire, ny qu'elle ait été de toute éternité; puisque cette Dissussin de la Matiere sans Bornes, ne seroit qu'un esset du Choix de Dieu, qui l'auroit trouvé mieux ainsi.

Sur S. 7.

33. Puisque l'Espace en soy est une chose ideale comme le Temps, il faut bien que l'Espace hors du Monde soit imaginaire, comme les Scholastiques mêmes l'ont bien reconnu. Il en est de même de l'Espace vuide dans le Monde; que je crois encore étre imaginaire, par les Raisons que j'ay produites.

34. On m'objecte le vuide inventé par M. Guerike de Magdebourg, qui se fait en pompant l'air d'un Recipient; & on pretend qu'il y a veritablement du vuide parfait, ou de l'Espace sans Matiere, en par-

tie

though finite, is not moveable. What is moveable, must be capable of changing its situation with respect to something else, and to be in a new state discernible from the first: Otherwise the Change is but a Fiction. A moveable Finite, must therefore. make part of another, Finite, that any Change may happen which can be observed.

32. Cartesius maintains, that Matter is unlimited; and I don't think he has been fufficiently confuted. And though this be granted him, yet it does not follow that Matter would be necessary, nor that it would have existed from all eternity; fince That unlimited diffusion of Matter. would only be an effect of God's Choice, judging That to be the better.

To \$ 7.

- 33. Since Space in it felf is an Ideal thing, like Time; Space out of the World must needs be imaginary, as the Schoolmen themselves have acknowledged. The case is the same with empty Space within the World; which I take also to be imaginary, for the reasons before alledged.
- 34. The Author objects against me the Vacuum discovered by Mr. Guerike of Magdeburg, which is made by pumping the Air out of a Receiver; And he pretends that there is truly a perfect Vacuum, or a Space N 4 -1

184 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIENITZ.

tie au moins, dans ce Recipient. Les Aristoteliciens & les Carrefiens, qui n'admettent point le veritable vuide, ent repondu à cette Experience de M. Guerike, aussi bien qu' à celle de M. Torricelli de Florence (qui vuidoit l'air d'un tuyau de verre par le moyen du Mercure,)qu'il n'y à point de vuide du tout dans le tuyau ou dans le Recipient; puisque le verre a des Pores fubrils, à travers desquels les Rayons de la Lumière, ceux de l'aimant, & autres matreres tres minces peuvent passer. Et je suis de leur Sentiment, trouvant qu' on peut comparer le Recipient à une caisse pleine de trous, qui seroit dans l'eau, dans luquelle il y auroit des Poissons, ou d'autres Corps grossiers, lesquels en étant ôtés, la place ne l'aifferoit. pas d'étre remplie par de l'eau: Il y a seulement cette difference, que l'eau, quoyqu' elle soit fluide & plus obeissante que ces Corps grossiers, est pourtant aussi pefante O aussi massive, ou même d'avantage; are lieu que la Matiere qui entre dans le Récipient à la place de l'Air, est bien plus mince. Les nouveaux Partisans du vuide repondent à cette Instance, que ce n'est pas la groffierete de la Matiere, mais simplement sa quantité qui fait de la Resistence : & par consequent qu'il y a necessairement plus de vuide, où il y a moins de resistence. On adjoute que la subtilité n' y fait rien, & que les parties du vif argent sont auffi fubtiles & fines que celles de l'eau, & que neantmoins

Space without Matter, (at least in part,) in that Receiver. The Arifotelians and Cortehrns who do not admit a true Vacuum, have faid in answer to that Experiment of Mr. Guerike, as well as to that of Terricellius of Florence, (who emptied the Air out of a: Glass-Tube by the help of Quick-Silver.) that there is no Vacuum at all in the Tube or in the Receiver; since Glass has small Pores, which the Beams of Light, the Ef-Auria of the Load-Stone, and other very thin fluids may go through. I am of their Opinion: And I think the Receiver may be compared to a Box full of Holes in the Water, having Fish or other gross Bodies that up in it; which being taken out, their place would nevertheless be filled up with Water. There is only this difference; that though Water be fluid and more yielding than those gross Bodies. yet it is as heavy and massive, if not more, than they: Whereas the Matter which gets into the Receiver in the room of the Air, is much more subtile. The new Sticklers for a Vacuum allege in answer to this Instance. that it is not the groffness of Matter, but its mere quantity, that makes relistance; and confequently that there is of necessity more Vacuum, where there is less Refistance. They add, that the fubtleness of Matter has nothing to do here; and that the particles of Quick-Silver are as fubtle and fine as those of Water; and yet that Quick-Silver refifts

186 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

le vif argent resiste plus de dix fois d'avantage. A cela je replique, que ce n'est pass tant la quantité de la Matiere, que la dissipulé qu'elle fait de ceder, qui fait la résistence. Par Exemple, le bois stottant contient moins de Matiere pesante que'l eau de pareil volume, & neantmoins il resiste plus

an bateau que l'eau.

35. Et quant au vif Argent, il contient à la verité environ quatorze fois plus de Matiere pesante que l'eau,dans un pareil Volume; màis il ne s'enfuit point qu' il contien. ne quatorze fois plus de Matiere absolument. Au contraire, l' eau encontient autant; mais prenant ensemble tant sa propre Matiera qui est pesante, qu' une Matiere étrangere non pesante, qui passe à travers de ses pores. Car tant le vif Argent que l' Eau, sont des Masses de Matiere pesante, percées à jour, à travers desquelles passe reaucoup de Matiere non pesante *, comme est apparemment celle des Rayons de huniere, & d'autres fluides insensibles; tels que celuy sur tout, qui cause luy même la pesanteur des Corps grospers, en s'écartant du centre où il les fait aller. Car c'est une étrange siction que de faire toute la Matiere pesante, & même vers toute autre Matiere, comme si tout Corps attiroit égaloment tout autre Corps selun les Masses & les Distances; & cela par

^{* (}Et qui re resiste point sensiblement,)

sists above Ten times more. To this I reply, that it is not so much the quantity of Matter, as its difficulty of giving place, that makes resistance. For instance; floating Timber contains less of heavy Matter, than an equal Bulk of Water does; and yet it makes more resistance to a Boat, than the Water does.

35. And as for Quick-Silver; 'tis true, it contains about Fourteen times more of beavy Matter, than an equal Bulk of Water does; but it does not follow, that it conthins Fourteen times more Matter absolutely. On the contrary, Water contains as much Matter; if we include both its own Matter, which is heavy; and the extraneous Matter void of heaviness, which passes through its Pores. For, both Quick-Silver and Water, are masses of heavy matter, full of Pores, through which there passes a great deal of Matter void of Heaviness; such as is probably that of the Rays of Light, and other insensible Fluids; and especially that which is it self the Cause of the gravity of gross Bodies, by receding from the Center towards which it drives those Bodies. For, it is a strange Imagination to make all Matter gravitate, and That towards all other Matter, as if each Body did equally attract every other Body according to their Masses and distances; and this by an Attraction properly so called, which is not derived from an occult impulse

188 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

une Attraction proprement dite, qui ne soit point derivée d'une Impulsion occulte des Corps: Au lieu que la pesanteur des Corps sensibles vers le Centre de la terre, doit être produite par le mouvement de quelque sluide. Et il en sera de même d'autres pesanteurs, comme de celles des Planetes vers le soleil, ou entre elles †.

Sur S. 8, 80 9

36. Comme j' avois objecté que l'Espace pris pour quelque chose de réel & d'absolu sans les Corps, seroit une Chose éternelle, impassible, independante de Dieu; on a taché d'éluder cette dissibilité, en disant que l'Espace est une proprieté de Dieu. J'ay opposé à cela dans mon Papier precedent, que la proprieté de Dieu est l'immensité; mais que l'Espace, qui est souvent commensuré avec les Corps, & l'immensité de Dieu, n'est pas la même chose.

37. J'ay encore objecte, si l'Espace est une proprieté, & si l'Espace infini est l' Immensité de Diéu, que l'Espace fini sera l'Etendue ou la mensurabilité de quelque chose sinie. Ainsi l'Espace occupé par un

[†] Un Corps n' est jamais mû naturellement, que par un autre Corps qui le pousse en le touchant; & aprés cela il continue jusqu' à ce qu' il soit empeché par un autre Corps qui le touche. Toute autre Operation sur les Corps, est ou miraculeuse ou imaginaire.

pulse of Bodies: Whereas the gravity of fensible Bodies towards the Centre of the Earth, ought to be produced by the motion of some Fluid. And the case must be the same with other gravities, such as is that of the Planets towards the Sun, or towards each other.

To § 8, and 9.

36. I objected, that Space, taken for something real and absolute without Bodies, would be a thing eternal, impassible, and independent upon God. The Author endeavours to elude this Difficulty, by saying that Space is a property of God. In answer to this, I have said, in my foregoing Paper, that the Property of God is Immensity; but that Space (which is often commensurate with Bodies,) and God's Immensity, are not the same thing.

37. I objected further, that if Space be a property, and infinite Space be the Immensity of God; sinite Space will be the Extension or Monsturability of something sinite. And therefore the Space taken up by a Body, will be the Extension of that Body. Which is an absurdicy; since a Body

190 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

Corps, sera l'Etendue de ce Corps: Chose absurde, puisqu' un Corps peut changer d'Espace, mais il ne peut point quitter son Etendue.

38. J' ay encore demandé, si l'Espace est une Proprieté, de quelle chose sera donc la Proprieté un Espace vuide borné, tel qu' on s' imagine dans le Recipient épuisé d' air ? il ne paroist point raisonnable de dire, que cet Espace vuide, rond ou quarré, soit une Proprieté de Dieu. Sera ce donc peut étre la Proprieté de quelques Substances immaterielles, étendues, imaginaires, qu' on se figure (ce semble) dans les Espaces imaginaires?

39. Si l' Espace est la Proprieté ou l' Affection de la Substance qui est dans l'Espace, le même Espace sera tantôt l' Affection d' un Corps, tantôt d' un autre Corps, tantôt d' un autre Corps, tantôt d' une Substance immaterielle, tantôs peut étre de Dieu, quand il est vuide de toute autre Substance materielle ou immaterielle. Mais voilà une estrange Proprieté ou Affection, qui passe de sujet en sujet. Las sujets quitteront ainsis leurs accidens comme un babit, à sin que d'autres sujets s' en puissent revestir. Après cela, comment distinguera t' on les Accidens & les Substances?

Body can change Space, but cannot leave its Extension.

38. I asked also; If Space is a Property, What thing will an empty limited Space, (such as that which my Adversary imagines in an exhausted Receiver,) be the Property of? It does not appear reasonable to fay, that this empty Space, either round or square, is a Property of God. Will it be then perhaps the Property of some immaterial, extended, imaginary Substances, which the Author feems to fancy in the imaginary Spaces?

29. If Space is the Property or Affection of the Substance, which is in Space; the fame Space will be sometimes the Affection of One Body, sometimes of another Body; sometimes of an immaterial Substance, and sometimes perhaps of God himself, when it is void of all other Substance material or immaterial. But this is a strange Property or Affection, which passes from one Subject to another. Thus Subjects will leave off their Accidents, like Cloaths; that Other Subjects may put them on. At this rate, how shall we distinguish Accidents and Substances?

40. And if limited Spaces are the Affections of limited Substances, which are in them; and infinite Space be a Property of God; a Property of God must (which is

192 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. Leibniz.

Dieu soit composée des Affections des Great tures; car tous les Espaces sinis pris en-

semble composent l' Espace infini. 41. Que si l'on nie que l'Espace borné * est une Affection des choses bornées; il ne sera pas raisonnable non plus, que l'Espace infini foit l'Affection où la Proprieté d'une chose institution of about infinue toutes ces difficultés dans mon papier pretédents : Mais il ne parvifs point qu' on air taché d' 🗩 fatisfaire. .. Y w yrugodi na -: 12. If ny encore d'aditres Raifons contre l'étrange Emagination que l'Espace est une Proprieté de Dieu. Si velu est, & Espace entre dans l'essence de Diens Or l'Espace a des parties r dono il in auroit des parties dans l'essence de Dioui Spostation Edmissi. . 42. De place, les Espaces sont tantast puides, tamos remplient dons il n'auta Hans Enfence de Dieundes parties itantos anides, tantui remplies, Or par confequent fujettes accuso changementi perpetuel. Les Corps vemplissant l'Espace, vempliraient une partie de l'effence de Dieu, Gy févoiens commensures, &, dias la Supposition de unido, une partie de l'essence de Dieu feis dans le Recipient. ... C'é Dien à parties, chefsemblera fort au Diepustoirien; qui aftoit d' Univers tout entier consideré commo un duemal divin: Ao. in if limited 1 44. Sall Espace infiniest l'immensità de

Dieu, le Temps infini fera l'actività de Dieu, le Temps infini fera l'actività de Dieu.

U faudra donc dire que resqui est dans l'

very strange,) be made up of the Assections of Creatures; For All sinite Spaces, taken

together, make up infinite Space.

41. But if the Author denies, that limited Space is an Affection of limited Things; it will not be reasonable neither, that infinite Space should be the Affection or Property of an infinite thing. I have suggested all these difficulties in my foregoing Paper; but it does not appear that the Author has endeavoured to answer them.

42. I have still other Reasons against this strange Imagination, that Space is a Property of God. If it be so, Space belongs to the Essence of God. But Space has parts: Therefore there would be parts in the Essence of God. Spectatum admission.

43. Moreover, Spaces are sometimes empty, and sometimes filled up. Therefore there will be in the Essence of God, Parts sometimes empty, and sometimes full, and consequently liable to a perpetual Change. Bodies, filling up Space, would fill up part of God's Essence, and would be commensurate with it; and in the Supposition of a Vacuum, Part of God's Essence will be within the Receiver. Such a God baving Parts, will very much resemble the Sciicks God, which was the whole Universe considered as a Divine Animal.

44. If infinite Space is God's Immensity, infinite Time will be God's Eternity; and therefore we must say, that what is in Space,

194 Cinquiente Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

Fipace, est dans l'immensité de Dieu, & pur consequent dans son Fisence; & que ce est dans qui est dans le Temps, * est aussi dans l'icurnité essence de Dieu. Phrases etranges, & qui de Dieu. jont bien connoistre qu'on abuse des termes.

As. In voiry envore une autre instance. It immensité de Dieu, fait que Dieu est dans tous les Espaces. Mais si Dieu est dans l'Espace, comment peut on dire que l'Espace est en Dieu, ou qu'il est sa proprieté à On a bien oui dire que la Proprieté soit dans le Sujet, mais on n'a jamais ont dire que le Sujet soit dans sa Proprieté. Do même, Dieu existe en chaque Temps: Comment donc le temps est il dans Dieu; & comment peut il être une Proprieté de Dieu & Ce sont des Alloglosses perpetuelles.

A6. Il paroist qu' on confond l' immensité on l'étendue des choses, avec l'Espace selon lequel cette étendue est prise. L'Espace insini n'est pas l'immensité de Dien, l'Espace sini n'est pas l'étendue des Corps; tomme le temps n'est point le durée. Les choses pardent leur étendue, mais elles ne gardent point toussours leur Espace. Chaque chose a sa propre étendue, sa propre durée, mais elle n'a point son propre temps, & elle ne parde point son propre Espace.

A71 l'oiry commons les hommes viennens

A71 l'oiry commons les hommes viennens de former la notion de l'Espate. Ils confiderent que flusioners chose vissent à la foir, et ils y tranvens unrebettin veuve de coese issent

Ance, is in God's lumentity, and contequently in his kilones; and that what in in Time, in also in the killance of God. Arrange Expressions; which plainly thow, that the Author makes a wrong use of Tarms

45. Ishall give another Instance of This. God's lumontity makes him actually prefent in all Spaces. But now if God is in Space, how can it be faid that Space is in God, or that it is a Property of God? We have often heard, that a Property is in its Subject i but we never heard, that a Subjest is in its Property. In like manner, God exists in all Trust How then can Time be in God; and how can it be a Property of God & These are perpetual Allogiothes.

46. It appears that the Author confounds homenstry, or the Extansion of Things, with the Space according to which that Extension is taken. Infinite Space, is not the Immonthly of God; Finite Space, is not the Extension of Bodies: As Time is not their Duration. Things keep their Extention; but they do not always keep their apace. Eveey Thing has its own hixtention, us own Duration; but it has not its own Time. and does not keep its awa Spuce.

47. I will here thow, bow Men come to form to themselves the Netton at Space They consider that many things exist at once, and they observe in them a certain Orate

196 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIENITZ.

* de ce rapport, istence, suivant lequel le rapport des uns 🕹 des autres est plus ou moins simple. C'est leur Situation ou distance. Lors qu' il arrive qu' un de cer coexistens change * de rapport à une multitude d'autres, sans qu' ils en changent entre eux; & qu' un nouveau venu acquiert le sapport tel que le premier avoit su à d'autres; on dit qu'il est venu d sa place, & on appelle ce changement un mouvement qui est dans celuy où est la cause immediate du changement. Et quand plusieurs, ou même tous, changeroient selon certaines regles connues de direction & de vistesse; on peut tousjours determiner le rapport de Situation que chacun acquiert à chacun'; & même celuy que chaque autre auroit, ou qu'il auroit à chaque autre, s' il n' avoit point changé, ou s' il avoit autrement changé. Et supposant, ou feignant que parmy ces coexissens il y ait un nombre suffisant de quelques uns, qui n' ayent point eu de changement en eux; on dira que ceux qui ont un rapport à ces existens fixes, tel que d'autres avoient auparavant à eux, ont eu la même place que ces derniers avoient eue. Et ce qui comprend toutes ces places, est appellé Espace. Ce qui fait voir que pour avoir l'idée de la place, & par consequent de l'Espace, il suffit de considerer ces rap-ports & les regles de leurs changemens, sans avoir besoin de se figurer icy aucune realité absolue bors des chases dont on considere la Situation. Et, pour donner une Espece de defini-

Order of Co-Existence, according to which the relation of one thing to another is more or less simple. This Order, is their Situation or Distance. When it happens that one of those Co-existent Things changes its Relation to a Multitude of others. which do not change their Relation among themselves; and that another thing, newly come, acquires the same Relation to the others, as the former had; we then fay, it is come into the Place of the former ; And this Change, we call a Motion in That Body, wherein is the immediate Cause of the Change. And though Many, or even All the Co-existent Things, should change according to certain known Rules of Direction and Swiftness; yet one may always determine the Relation of Situation, which every Co-existent acquires with respect to every other Co-existent; and even That Relation, which any other Co-existent would have to this, or which this would have to any other, if it had not changed, or if it had changed any otherwise. And supposing, or feigning, that among thole Co-existents, these is a sufficient Number of them, which have undergone no Change; then we may fay, that Those which have such a Relacion to those fixed Existents, as Others had to them before, have now the fame Place which those others had. And That which comprehends all these Places, is called Space. Which shows.

198 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIENITZ.

definition, Place est ce qu' on dit être le même à A & à B, quand le rapport de coexistence de B: avec C, E, F. G, &c. convient entierement avec le rapport de coexistence qu' A a eu avac les mêmas; supposé qu' il:n' y ait ou orecune couse de obangement dans C, E, F, G, &to On pournois dire aussi, sans esthele, que place est ce qui est le même en imomeus différents à das existens quoyque differens, quand: kur repports de coexistence avec contains existens, que depuis un de tes momens at l'asitre sont supposés fixes, convienment entierement. Et existens fixes some cour dans beforels it n' y a point eu comfe du changement de l'. ordre, de coaxissence avec el sumes; ou (ce qui est le même) dans lesquels il m' y a paint en de mouvementos Histori Espaco ast de qui resulte des places prises onsembles Et il est bon icy du consideren he dessence entre la Place; & entre le napport de Situatian qui est dans la Coepis que escupe la place. Can la place d'A' de da B sest la même, audieu que le rapporte d' de aux corps fixes, n'est pas precisement mindividuellementi le mamo que de rapport que B (qui prendra sa place) aura aux memes fixes; & * ils conviennent sewlement. Car deux sujets differens, comme A & B, ne sauroient avoir precisement la wema affection individuelle ; un même accident individuel ne se pouvent point trauver en deux figets, m

* ces' rapports conviennent

shows, that in order to have an Idea of Place, and consequently of Space, it is fufficient to consider these Relations, and the Rules of their Changes, without needing to fancy any absolute Reality out of the Things whole Situation we consider, And, to give a kind of a Definition: Place is That, which we say is the same to A and, to B, when the Relation of the Coexistence of B, with C, E, F, G, $O_{\mathcal{C}}$. agrees perfectly with the Relation of the Co-existence, which A had with the same $C, E, F, G, \mathcal{O}c$. Supposing there has been no cause of Change in C, E, F, G, &c. It might be faid also, without entring into any further. Particularity, that Place is That, which is the Same in different moments to different existent Things, when their Relations of Co-existence with certain Other Existents, which are supposed to continue fixed from one of those Moments to the other, agree intirely together. fixed Existents are those, in which there has been no cause of any Change of the Order of their Co-existence with others; or (which is the same Thing,) in which there has been no Motion. Lastly, Space is That which refults from Places taken together. And here it may not be amis, to consider the Difference between Place, and the Relation of Situation, which is in the Body that fills up the Place. For, the Place of A and B, is the same 3 whereas

200 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

passer de sujet en sujet. Mais l'esprit nno content de la convenance, cherche une identité, une chose qui soit veritablement la même, & la conçoit comme bors de ces sujets; & c'est ce qu' on appelle icy place & Espace. Cependant cela ne sauroit être qu' ideal, contenant un certain ordre où l'esprit conçoit l'application des rapports : Comme P esprit se peut figurer un ordre consistant en lignes Genealogiques, dont les grandeurs ne consisteroient que dans le nombre des Generations, où chaque Personne auroit sa place; Et si l'on adjoutoit la sistion de la metempsychofe; & flisoit revenir les mêmes ames bumanes, les Personnes y pourroient changer de place; Celuy qui a été pere ou grand pere, pourroit devenir sils ou petit fils, &c. Et cependant ces places, lignes, & Espaces Genealogiques, quoy qui eller exprimeroient des verités réelles, ne seroient que choses ideales. Je donneray encore un exemple de l'usage de l'esprit de se former, à l'occasion des accidens qui font dans les sujets, quelque chose qui leur reponde bors des sujets. La Raison ou Proportion entre deux lignes, L, & M, peut etre concue de trois façons: Comme Raison du plus grand L, au moindre M; comme Raison du moindre M, au plus grand L; & enfin comme quelque chose d'abstrait des deux, c'est à dire comme la Raison entre L & M, sans confiderer lequel est l'anterieur ou le posterieur, le sujet ou l'objet : Et c'

the Relation of A to fixed Bodies, is not precifely and individually the same, as the Relation which B (that comes into its Place) will have to the fame fixed Bodies; But these Relations agree only. For, two different Subjects, as A and B, cannot have precisely the same individual Affection; it being impossible, that the same individual Accident should be in two Subjects, or pass from one Subject to another. But the Mind not contented with an Agreement, looks for an Identity, for something that should be truly the same; and conceives it as being extrinsick to the Subjects: And this is what we here call Place and Space. But this can only be an Ideal Thing; containing a certain Order, wherein the Mind conceives the Application of Relations. In like manner, as the Mind can fancy to it self an Order made up of Genealogical Lines, whose Bigness would consist only in the Number of Generations, wherein every Person would have his Place: And if to this one should add the Fiction of a Metempsychosis, and bring in the same Human Souls again; the Persons in those Lines might change Place; he who was a Father, or a Grand-Father, might become a Son, or a Grand-Son, &c. yet those Genealogical Places, Lines, and Spaces, though they should express real Truths, would only be Ideal Things. shall allege another Example, to show how

est ainsi que les proportions sont considerées dans la Musique. Dans la premiere con-

sideration, L le plus grand, est le sujet; Dans la seconde, M le moindre, est le sujet de cet accident, que les Philosophes appellent relation ou rapport: Mais quel en sera le sujet dans le troisseme sens? On ne sauroit dire que tous les deux, L & M ensemble, * sont le sujet d'un tel accident; car ainsi nous aurions un accident en deux sujets, qui auroit une jambe dans l' un, & l'autre dans l'autre; ce qui est contra la notion des accidens. Donc il faut dire, que ce rapport dans le troisieme sens, est bien hors des fujets; mais que n'étant ny substance ny accident, cela doit étre une chose pures ment ideale; dont la consideration ne laisse pas d'étre utile. Au reste, j' ay fait icy à peu pres comme Euclide, qui ne pouvant pas bien faire entendre absolument ce que c'est que Raison prise dens le sens des Geometres, definit bien ce que c'est que mêmes Raisons. Et c'est ainsi que, pour expliquer te que c'est que la Place, j' ay voulu definir ce que c'est que le même Place. Je remarque enfin, que les traces des mobiles, qu' ils laissent quelques sois dans les immobiles sur lesquels ils exercent leur mouvement; ont

donné à l'imagination des hommes l'occasion de se former cette idée, comme s'il restoit encore quelque trace lors même qu'il n' y a aucune chose immobile: Mais cela n' est qu' ideal, & porte seulement que s'il y

avoit

* foient le Gc.

the Mindules, upon occasion of Accidents which are in Subjects, to fancy to it self formething answerable to those Accidenta ess of the Subjects. The Ratio or Proportion between two Lines L and M, may be conceived three several Ways; as a Retio of the greater L, to the lesser M; as a Ratio of the leffer M, to the greater L; and lastly. as fomething abstracted from Both, that is, as the Ratio between L and M, without confidering which is the Antecedent, or which the Consequent; which the Subject, and which the Object. And thus it is, that Proportions are considered in Musick. In the first way of considering them, L the greater; in the second, M the lesser, is the Subject of That Accident, which Philosophers call Relation. But, Which of them will be the Subject, in the Third way of confidering them? It cannot be faid that both of them. Land M together, are the Subject of such an Accident a for if to. we should have an Accident in two Subjests, with one Leg in one, and the other in the other; Which is contrary to the Notion of Accidents. Therefore we must fay; that this Relation, in this Third way of confidering it, is indeed out of the Subjects; but being neither a Substance. nor at Actident, it must be a mere Ideal Thing, the confideration of which is neventheles useful. To conclude: I have here done much like Euclid, who not be-

204 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

avoit la quelque immobile, on l'y pourroit designer. Et c'est cette Analogie qui fait qu' on s' imagine des Places, des Traces, des Espaces, quorque ces choses ne consistent que dans la varité des Rapports, & nullement dans quelque realité absolue.

48. Au reste, si l' Bspace vuide de corps (qu' on s' imagine) n' est pas vuide tout à stat, de quoy est il donc plein? T' a-t-il peut être des Esprits étendus, ou des Substances immaterielles capables de s' étendre & de se resserrer, qui s' y promenent, & qui se penetrent sant s' incommoder, comme les ombres de deux corps se penetrent sur la surface d' une muraille? Je voy revenir les plaisantes imaginations de seu M. Henry Morus (bomme savant & bien intentionné d' ailleurs,) & de quelques autres, qui ont crû que ces Esprits se peuvent rendre impenetrables

ing able to make his Readers well understand what Ratio is absolutely in the Sense of Geometricians; defines what are the same Ratio's. Thus, in like manner, in order to explain what Place is, I have been content to define what is the same Place. Lastly; I observe, that the Traces of moveable Bodies, which they leave sometimes upon the immoveable ones, on which they are moved; have given Men occasion to form in their Imagination such an Idea. as if some Trace did still remain, even when there is Nothing unmoved. But this is a mere Ideal Thing, and imports only, that if there was any unmoved thing there, the Trace might be marked out upon it. And 'tis This Analogy, which makes Men fancy Places, Traces and Spaces; though those things confift only in the Truth of Relations, and not at all in any absolute Reality.

48. To conclude. If the Space (which the Author fancies) void of all Bodies, is not altogether empty; what is it then full of? Is it full of extended Spirits perhaps, or immaterial Substances, capable of extending and contrasting themselves; which move therein, and penetrate each other without any Inconveniency, as the Shadows of two Bodies penetrate one another upon the Surface of a Wall? Methinks I see the revival of the odd Imaginations of Dr. Henry More (otherwise a Learned and well-meaning Man,) and of some Others,

206 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

bles quand bon leur somble. Il y en a même eu, qui se sont imaginé que l'bomme dans l'état d'integrité, avoit aussi le don de la penetration; mais qu'il est devenu solide; opaque vi impenetrable, par sa cheute. N'est ce pas renverser les Notions des vivoses, donner à Dieu des parties, donner de l'étendue aux Esprits ? Le seul principe du bosoin de la Raison sussignante, sait disparoitre tous ces spectres d'Imagination; Les Hommes se sont aisement des sictions, saute de bien amployer ve grand Principe.

Sur \$ 10.

tion est éternelle, mais que les choses qui durent tousjours, sont éternelles. Tout ce qui existe du Temps & de la Duration, perit continuellement: Et comment une chose pourroit elle exister éternellement, qui à parler exactement n'existe jamais à Car comment pourroit exister une chôse, dont jamais aucune partie n'existe ? Du Temps n'existent jamais que des instans, et l'instant n'est pas même une partie du temps. Quiconque considerera

^{*} peut point dire qu' une certaine durée est eternelle mais on peut dire que les choses qui durent tousjours, sont empolles, en gagnant tousjours une durée nouvelles. Tout ce qui existe du Temps & de la Duration, etant successification, perit, &c.

who fancied that those Spirits can make themselves impenetrable whenever they please. Nay, some have fancied, that Man, in the State of Innocency, had also the Gift of Penetration; and that he became Solid, Opake, and Impenetrable by his Fall. Is it not overthrowing our Notions of Things, to make God have Parts, to make Spirits have Extension? The Principle of the Want of a sufficient Reason does alone drive away all these Spectres of Imagination. Men easily run into Fictions, for want of making a right Use of that great Principle.

To \$ 10.

49. It cannot be faid, that Duration is Eternal; but that Things, which continue always, are Eternal. Whatever exists of Time and of Duration, perishes continually: And how can a thing exist Eternally, which, (to speak exactly,) does never exist at all? For, how can a thing exist, where of no Part does ever exist? Nothing of Time does ever exist, but Instants; and an Instant is not even it self a part of Time. Whoever considers these Observations, will easily apprehend that Time can only be an Ideal Thing. And the Analogy between Time and Space, will easily make it appear,

208 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

considerera ces Observations, comprendra bien que le Temps ne sauroit être qu' une chost ideale; & l' analogie du Temps & de l' Espace sera bien juger, que l' un est aust ideal que l' autre. †

50. Si la realité de l'Espace & du Temps est necessaire pour l'immensité & l'éternité de Dieu; s'il faut que Dieu soit dans des Espaces; si être dans l'Espace est une Proprieté de Dieu; Dieu sera en quelque façon dependant du Temps & de l'Espace, & en aura besoin. Car l'échappatoire que l'Espace & le Temps || sont des Proprietés de Dieu, est deja fermé.

Sur § 11 & 12.

51. Comme j'avois objecté que l'Espace ne sauroit être en Dieu, parce que l'Espace a des parties; on cherche un autre échappatoire en s'éloignant du sens receu des termes, & soûtenant que l'Espace n'a point de parties, parceque ses parties ne sont point separables, & ne sauroient être eloignées les unes des autres par discerption. Mais il sussit que l'Espace ait des parties, soit que

† Cependant, si en disant que la Duration d'une chose est éternelle, on entend seulement que la chose dure éternellement; je n'ay rien à y redire.

^{||} sont en Dieu, & comme des proprietés de Dieu, est deja fermé. Pourroit on supporter l'Opinion qui soutiendroit que les Corps se promenent dans les parties de l'essence divine?

that the one is as merely Ideal as the other.

50. If the reality of Space and Time, is necessary to the Immensity and Eternity of God; if God must be in Space; if being in Space, is a Property of God; he will, in some measure, depend upon Time and Space, and stand in need of them. For I have already prevented That Subterfuse, that Space and Time are Properties of God.

To § 11, and 12.

God, because it has Parts. Hereupon the Author seeks another Subterfuge; by departing from the received Sense of Words; maintaining that Space has no parts, because its parts are not separable, and cannot be removed from one another by discerption. But 'tis sufficient that Space has parts, whether those parts be separable or not; And they may be assigned in Space, either by the Bodies that are in it, or by

210 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIENITZ.

que ces parties soyent separables ou non; o on les peut assigner dans l'Espace, soit par les corps qui y sont, soit par les lignes ou surfaces qu' on y peut mener.

Súr 9 13.

52. Pour prouver que l' Espace sans les corps, est quelque realité absolue; on m' avoit objetté que l'Univers materiel sini, se pourrait promener dans l' Espace. pondu, qu'il ne peroist point raisonnable que l'Univers materiel soit fini; Et quand on le supposeroit, il est deraisonnable qu'il ait de mouvement autrement qu' entant que ses parties changent de Situation entre elles; parce qu' un tel mouvement ne produiroit aucun changement observable, & seroit sans but. Autre chose est quand ses Parties changent de Situation entre Elles; car alors on y reconnoist un mouvement dans l'Espace, mais * qui consiste dans l' ordre des rapports, qui sont changés. On replique maintenant, que la verité du mouvement est independante de l' Observation, & qu' un Vaisseau peut avancer, suns que celuy qui est dadans s' en apperçoive. Je reponds que le mouvement est independant de l' Observation, mais qu'il n'est point independant de l'observabilité. n'y a point de mouvement, quand il n'y a point de changement observable. Et même quand il n'y a point de changement observable, il n'y a point de changement du tout. Le Contraire

* confiftant dans Lines and Surfaces that may be drawn and described in it.

To \$ 13.

52. In order to prove that Space, without Bodies, is an absolute reality; the Author objected, that a finite material Universe might move forward in Space. I answered, it does not appear reasonable that the material Universe should be finite; and, though we should suppose it to be finite ; yet 'tis unreasonable it should have motion any otherwise, than as its parts change their Situation among themselves; because such a motion would * produce no * See Ap-Change that could be observed, and would pendix, be without Delign. 'Tis another thing, No. 19 when its parts change their Situation among themselves; For then there is a motion in Space; but it confifts in the order of Relations which are changed. The Author replies now, that the reality of Motion does not depend upon being observed; and that a Ship may go forward, and yet a Man, who is in the Ship, may not perceive I answer. Motion does not indeed depend upon being Observed; but it does depend upon being possible to be Observed. There is no Motion, when there is no Change that can be Observed. And when there

212 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

traire est fondé sur la supposition d' un Espace réel absolu, que j'ay resuté demonstrativement par le principe du besoin d' une raison suffisante des choses.

53. Je ne trouve rien dans la definition huitieme des Principes Mathematiques de la Nature, ny dans le Scholie de cette Definition, qui prouve ou puisse prouver la réalité de l'Espace en soy. Cependant j' accorde qu' il y a de la difference entre un Mouvement absolu veritable d'un corps, & un simple changement relatif de sa Situation par rapport à un autre Corps. lors que la Cause immediate du changement est dans le Corps, il est veritablement en mouvement; & alors la Situation des autres par rapport à luy, sera changée par consequence, quoyque la Cause de ce changement ne soit point en eux. Il est vray qu' à parler exactement, il n' y a point de Corps qui soit parfaitement & entierement en repos; mais c'est de quoy on fait Abstraction, en considerant la chose Mathematiquement. Ainsi je n' ay rien laissé sans reponse, de tout ce qu' on a allegué pour la réalité absolue de l'Espace. Et j'ay demonstré la fausseté de cette réalité, par un principe fondamental des plus raisonnables & des plus éprouvés, contre lequel on ne sauroit trouver aucune Exception ny Instance. Au reste, on peut juger par tout ce que je viens de dire,

is no Change that can be Observed, there is no Change at all. The contrary Opinion is grounded upon the Supposition of a real absolute Space, which I have demonstratively consuted by the Principle of the most of a Ediciont Page of this contract.

want of a sufficient Reason of things.

53. I find nothing in the Eighth Definition of the Mathematical Principles of Nature, nor in the Scholium belonging to it, that proves, or can prove, the reality of Space in it self. However, I grant there is a difference between an absolute true motion of a Body, and a mere relative Change of its Situation with respect to another Body. For when the immediate Cause of the Change is in the Body, That Body is truly in Motion; and then the Situation of other Bodies, with respect to it, will be changed consequently, though the Cause of that Change be not in Them. 'Tis true that, exactly speaking, there is not any one Body, that is perfectly and intirely at Rest; but we frame an abstarct Notion of Rest, by considering the thing Mathematically. Thus have I left nothing unanswered, of what has been alledged for the absolute reality of Space. And I have demonstrated the falshood of that reality. by a fundamental Principle, one of the most certain both in Reason and Experience; against which, no Exception or Instance can be alledged. Upon the whole, one may judge from what has been faid,

214 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIENITZ.

dire, que je ne dois point admettre un Univers mobile, ny aucune Place bors de l'Univers materiel.

Sur § 14.

54. Je ne connois aucune Objection à laquolle je ne crois d'avoir repondu suffisamment. Et quant à cette Objection, que l' Espace & le Temps sont des Quantités, ou plusion des choses douées de quantité, & que la Situation & l'Ordre ne le sont point; Je reponds que l'Ordre a aussi sa quantité; il grace qui precede & ce qui suit; il y a distance ou intervalle. Les choses Relatives sont leur Quantité, aussi bien spie les absolaies. Par Exemple, les Raisons ou Proportions dans les Mathematiques, unt leur quantité, & se mosurent par les Logapithones; & cependant ce sont des Relations. Ainsi quesque le Temps & l'Espace consistent en rapports, ils ne laissent pas d' proper leur quantité.

Sur § 15.

Dieu a pli créer le monde plussoit, il faut se bien entendre. Comme j'ey demontré que le Tempo Jav: les Choses n'est autre obose qu' une somple possibilité idéale, il est manifeste que si quelqu' un diseit que se même monde.

that I ought not to admit a moveable Universe; nor any Place out of the material Universe.

To § 14.

54. I am not sensible of any objection, but what I think I have sufficiently answered. As for the objection that Space and Time are Quantities, or rather things endowed with Quantity; and that Situation and Order are not so: I answer, that Order also has its Quantity; There is in it, that which goes before, and that which follows; There is Distance or Interval Relative things have their Quantity, as well as absolute ones. For instance, Ratios or Proportions in Mathematicks, have their Quantity, and are measured by Ingarithms; and yet they are Relations. And therefore though Time and Space consist in Relations, yet they have their Quantity.

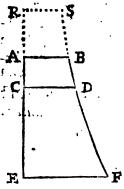
To \$ 15.

could have created the World forner; 'tis necessary here to understand each other rightly. Since I have demonstrated, that Time, without Things, is nothing else but a mere ideal Possibility; 'tis manifest, if any one should say that this Same World, which

216 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

monde qui a eté créé effectivement, * sans aucun autre changement ait pû étre créé plustost, il ne dira rien d'intelligible. Car il n' y a aucune marque ou difference, par laquelle il seroit possible de connoistre qu'il eut été créé plustost. Ainsi, comme je l' ay deja dit, supposer que Dieu ait créé le même monde plustost, est supposer quelque chose de chimerique. C'est faire du Temps une chose absolue independante de Dieu; au lieu † que le Temps ne coëxiste qu' aux Creatures, & ne se conçoit que par l'ordre & la quantité de leurs changemens.

56. Mais absolument parlant, on peut concevoir qu' un Univers ait commencé plu-



Rost qu'il n'a toumencé effectivement. Supposons que nostre Univers, ou quelque autre, soit representé par la Figure AF; que l'Ordonnée AB, represente son premier estat; or que les Ordonnées CD, EF, representent des Estats suivans. Je dis

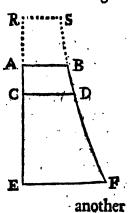
qu' on peut concevoir qu'il ait commencé plustost, en concevant la Figure prolongée en arrière, en y adjoutant SRABS. Car ainsi, les choses estant augmentées, le

^{*} ait, sans aucun autre changement, pû être &c. † que le temps doit coexister aux &c.

has been actually created, might have been created fooner, without any other Change; he would fay nothing that is intelligible. For there is no mark or difference, whereby it would be possible to know, that this World was created fooner. And therefore, (as I have already faid,) to suppose that God created the same World fooner, is supposing a Chimerical Thing. Tis making Time a thing absolute, independent upon God; whereas Time does only co-exist with Creatures, and is only conceived by the Order and Quantity of their Changes.

may conceive that an Universe began sooner, than it actually did. Let us suppose our Universe, or any other, to be represented by the Figure AF; and that the Ordinate AB represents its first State; and the Ordinates CD, EF, its following States: I say, one may conceive that such a World began

fooner, by conceiving the Figure prolonged backwards, and by adding to it S R A B S. For thus, Things being encreased, Time will be also encreased. But whether such an augmentation be reasonable and agreeable to God's Wisdom, is



218 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

temps sera augmenté aussi. Mais si une telle Augmentation est raisonnable & conforme à la sagesse de Dieu, c'est une autre Question; & il faut dire que non, autrement Dieu l'auroit faite. Ce seroit comme,

Humano capiti cervicem Pictor equinam

Jungere si velic

Il en est de même de la Destruction. Comme on pourroit concevoir quelque chose d' adjouté au commencement, on pourroit conacuoir de même quelque chose de retranché vers la sin. Mais le retranchement encore seroit devaisonnable.

57. C'est ainsi qu'il paroist comment on doit entendre que Dinu a créé les chases en quel temps il luy a plu ; car cela depend des chases qu'il a resolu da cyéer. Mais les choses étant resolues avec leurs rapports, il n'y a plus de choix sur le Temps ny sur la Place; qui n' ont rien de réel en eux à part, co rion de determinant, au même rien de discernable.

58. On ne peut danc point dire, comme l' on fait icy, que la sajesse de Dieu peut avoir de bonnes Raisons pour créer ne Monde (this World) dans un tel temps particulier; de temps particulier pris sans les choses, estant une siction impossible; de de bonnes Raisons d' un choix ne se pouvant point trouver là où tout est indisernable.

another Question, to which we answer in the Negative; otherwise God would have made such an Augmentation. It would be like as

Humano capiti cervicem pictor equinam Jungere si velit.

The case is the same with respect to the destruction of the Universe. As one might conceive something added to the Beginning, so one might also conceive something taken off towards the End. But such a Retrenching from it, would be also unreasonable.

- 57. Thus it appears how we are to understand, that God created things at what Time he pleased; For this depends upon the Things, which he resolved to create. But Things being once resolved upon, together with their Relations; there remains no longer any choice about the Time and the Place, which of themselves have nothing in them real, nothing that can dissipation them, nothing that is at all discernible.
- Author does here, that the Wildom of God may have good reasons to create this World at such or such a particular Time. That particular Time, considered without the things, being an impossible fiction; and good reasons for a choice, being not to be found, where every thing indiffernible.

59. Win

220 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

59. Quand je parle de ce Monde, j' entends tout l'Univers des Creatures materi--elles & immaterielles prises ensemble, depuis le commencement des choses; mais si l' on n' entendoit que le commencement du monde materiel, & supposoit avant luy des creatures immaterielles, on se mettroit un peu plus à la Raison en cela. Car le temps-alors estant marqué par des Choses qui existeroient dejà, ne seroit plus indifferent; & il y pourroit avoir du choix. Il est vray qu' on ne feroit que differer la difficulté. Car supposant que l'Univers entier des Creatures immaterielles & materielles ensemble a commencé, il n' y a plus de choix sur le temps où Dieu le voudroit mettre.

60. Ainsi on ne doit point dire, comme l' on fait icy, que Dieu a creé les choses dans un Espace, ou dans un Temps particulier, qui luy a phi. Car tous les Temps, & tous les Espaces, en eux mêmes, estant parfaitement uniformes & indiscernables, l'un ne sauroit plaire plus que l'autre,

61. Te ne veux point m' arrester icy sur mon sentiment expliquée ailleurs, qui porte qu'il n' y a point de Substances créées entierement destituées de Matiere. Car je tiens avec les Anciens & avec la Raifon, que les Anges ou les Intelligences, & les Ames separces du corps grossier, ont tousjours des Corps Subtils, quoyqu' elles mêmes for-

59, When I speak of This World, I mean the whole Universe of material and immaterial Creatures taken together, from the beginning of Things. But if any one mean only the beginning of the material World. and suppose immaterial Creatures before it; he would have somewhat more Reason for his Supposition. For Time then being, marked by things that existed already, it would be no longer indifferent; and there might be room for choice. And yet indeed, this would be only putting off the difficulty. For, supposing the whole Universe of immaterial and material Creatures together, to have a beginning; there is no longer any Choice about the Time, in which God would place that Beginning.

60. And therefore one must not say, as the Author does here, that God created things in what particular Space, and at what particular Time he pleased. For, All Time and All Spaces being in themselves persectly uniform and indiscernible from each other, one of them cannot please more

than another.

Γ

Opinion explained elsewhere, that there are no created Substances wholly destitute of Matter. For I hold with the Ancients, and according to Reason, that Angels or Intelligences, and Souls separated from a gross Body, have always subtil Bodies, though

2 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

ent incorporelles. La Philosophie vulgaire admet aisément toute sorte de Fictions; la

mienne est plus severe.

62. Je ne dis point que la Matiere & l' Espace est la même chose; je dis seulement qu' il n'y a point d'Espace, où il n'y a point de Matiere; & que l'Espace en luy même n'est point une réalité absolue. L'Espace & la Matiere different comme le temps & le mouvement. Cependant ces choses, quoyque differentes, se trouvent inseparables.

63. Mais il ne s' ensuit nullement que la Matiere soit éternelle & necessaire, si non en supposant que l'Espace est éternel & necessaire; Supposition mal fondée en toutes

manieres.

Sur S. 16 & 17.

64. Je crois d'avoir repondu à tout; O j'ay repondu particulierement à cette Objection, qui pretend que l'Espace & le Temps ont une Quantité, & que l'Ordre

n'en a point. Voyés cydessus, n. 54.

65. Fay fait voir clairement, que la Contradiction est dans l'Hypothese du sentiment opposé, qui cherche une difference là où il n'y en a point. Et ce seroit une iniquité maniseste, d'en vouloir inserer, que j'ay reconnu de la Contradiction dans mon propre sentiment.

though they themselves be incorporeal. The vulgar Philosophy easily admits all sorts of Fictions: Mine is more strict.

62. I don't say that Matter and Space are the same Thing. I only say, there is no Space, where there is no Matter; and that Space in it self is not an absolute reality. Space and Matter differ, as Time and Motion. However, these things, though different, are inseparable.

63. But yet it does not at all follow, that Matter is eternal and necessary; unless we suppose Space to be eternal and necessary: A Supposition ill grounded in all respects.

To § 16, and 17.

And I have particularly replied to That Objection, that Space and Time have Quantity, and that Order has none. See above, Numb. 54.

65. I have clearly shown that the Contradiction lies in the Hypothesis of the opposite Opinion, which looks for a difference where there is none. And it would be a manifest iniquity to infer from thence, that I have acknowledged a Contradiction in my own Opinion.

224 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

Sur § 18.

66. Il revient icy un raisonnement, que j'ay dejà detruit cydessus, Nomb. 17. On dit que Dieu peut avoir de bonnes Raisons pour placer deux Cubes parfaitement égaux & semblables: Et alors il faut bien (dit on) qu'il leur assigne leurs Places, quoyque tout soit parfaitement égal. Mais la chose ne doit point étre detachée des ses Circonstances. Ce raisonnement consiste en Notions incompletes. Les Resolutions de Dieu, ne sont jamais abstraites & imparfaites; comme si Dieu decernoit premierement à créer les deux Cubes, & puis decernoit à part où les mettre. Les Hommes bornés comme ils sont, sont capables de proceder ainsi; ils resoudront quelque chose, & puis ils se trouveront embarrassés sur les moyens, sur les voyes, sur les Places, sur les Circonstances. Dieu ne prend jamais une Resolution sur les Fins, sans en prendre en même temps sur les Moyens, & sur toutes les Circonstances. Et. même j'ay montré dans la Theodicée, qu' à proprement parler, il n' y a qu' Un Seul Decret pour l'Univers tout entier, par le quel il est resolu de l'admettre de la possibilité à l'existence. Ainsi Dieu ne choissira point de Cube, sans choisir sa Place en même temps; & il ne choisira jamais entre des indifcernables.

To \$ 18.

66. Here I find again an Argument, which I have overthrown above, Numb. 17. The Author lays, God may have good Reafons to make two Cubes perfectly equal and alike: And then (fays he) God must needs assign them their Places, though every other Respect be perfectly equal. But Things. ought not to be separated from their Circumstances. This Argument consists in incomplete Notions. God's Resolutions are never abstract and imperfect: As if Goddecreed, first, to create the two Cubes; and then, made another decree where to place them. Men, being such limited Creatures as they are, may act in this manner. They may refolve upon a thing, and then find themselves perplexed: about Means, Ways, Places, and Circumstances. But God never takes a Resolution about the Ends, without refolving at the fame time. about the Means, and all the Circumstan-, Nay, I have shown in my Theodicaa. that, properly speaking, there is but One. Decree for the whole Universe, whereby God resolved to bring it out of possibility into Existence. And therefore God will not chuse a Cube, without chusing its, Place at the same time; And he will never chuse among Indiscernables.

226 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

67. Les parties de l'Espace ne sont determinées d'distinguées que par les choses qui y sont: Et la diversité des choses dans l'Espace, determine Dieu à agir differemment sur différentes parties de l'Espace. Mais l'Espace pris sans les choses, n'a riende determinant, d'même il n'est rien d'actuel.

68. Si Dieu est résolu de placer un certain Cube de matiere, il s' est aussi determiné sur la Place de ce Cube; mais e est par rapport à l'autres portions de matiere, et non pas par rapport à l'Espace detaché, où il s'y à rieu de determinant.

of. Mais là sagesse ne permet par qu'il place en même temps deux Oubes puratte ment en paix & sembles, parco qu'il n' fi a pas mojen de trouver une Rasson de temp asson des places différentes. Il sauroit une volonté sans motif.

moif, (telle que des raisonnements superficiels affignent à Dieu,) au hazard d'Epicone. On y oppose que le hazard d'Epicone est une nécéssité aveugle, o non pas un élsoix de volonté. Je replique que le hazard d'Apicone est pas tine necessité, mais quelque chose d'indifférent. Epicore l'introdussité exprés pour éviter la necessité. Il est une que le hazard est aveugle; mais une por lonte sans moins due au simple hazard.

67. The Parts of Space are not determined and distinguished, But by the Things which are in it: And the Diversity of Things in Space, determines God to act differently upon different Parts of Space, But Space without Things, has morning whereby it may be diffinguished and in-

... 660 If God is refolved to place a certain Cube of Matter at all, he is also resolved in what particular Place to per it. But 'tis with respect to Other Parts of Matter: and not with respect to bare Space it felf. in which there is nothing to distinguish it.

69. But Wildom does not allow God to place at the same time two Cubes perfettly equal and alike; because there is no way to find any Reafon for aligning them diffe- see Ap. rent Places. At this Rate, there would be pendix, * a Will without a Motive.

70. A Will without Motive, Viech as Superficial Reasoners Suppose to be in God,) I compard to Epicurus's Chance. The Auther answers; Epicarus's Chance is a blind Necessity, and not a Choice of Will. I reply, that Epicurus's Chance is not a Neceffity, but Something indifferent. curus brought it in our purpose to avoid 'Tis true, Chance is Blind; Necessity. But a Will without Mative would be no less Blind and ho less owing to mere Chance. e , All ner, a point. Vers

-228 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

Mit of 1 Sur \$129.

futé cy dessus, Nomb. 21; que la matiere he sairoit être créée, si Dieu ne choisit point parvix let indiscernables. On auroit Raison, si la matiere consistoit en Atomes, en Corps, similaires, ou autres sictions semblables de la Philosaphie superficielle. Mais oe même grand principe, qui combat le choix entre les indiscernables, detruit aussi ces sictions mal bâties.

Sur § 20.

er maintain

piet, (Nomb, 7 & 8.) que Dieu n' auroit
point en luy un principe d' agir, s'il étoit

* choses determiné par les * externes. F ay reexternes; pondu que les idées des choses externes font
en luy; G qu' ainsi il est diterminé par
des raisons internes, c'est à dire par sa sagesse. Maintenant on ne veut point entendre,
à propos de quoy je l' aye dit.

Sur S 24. 3 Surat

ons qu' on me fait, ce que Dan ne veut point, avec ce qu' il ne peut point. Voyés ci dessus,

. (

estably with

To \$ 19.

been already confuted above, Numb. 21, 57 that Matter cannot be created, without God's chuling among Indifcernibles. He would be in the right, if Matter confifted of Atoms, similar Particles, or other the like Fictions of superficial Philosophy, But That great Principle, which proves there is no Choice among Indiscernibles, destroys also these ill-contrived Fictions.

To \$ 20.

his Thind Raper, (Numb. 7, and 8;) that God would not have in himself a Principle of Acting, if he was determined by Things External. I answered, that the Ideas of External Things are in him, and that therefore he is determined by Internal Reasons, that is, by his Wisdom. But the Author here will not understand, to what end I said it.

To \$ 21.

Objections against me, what God will not do, with what he cannot do. See above, Numb. 9. For Example; God can do every Q 3 Thing

Cinqueme Ecris de Mr. Lieibhitz.

† & plus bas, N°76.

ci-dessus, Nomb. 9 †. Par Exemple; Dieu peut faire tout ce qui est possible, mais il ne veut faire que le Meilleur. Ainsi je ne dis point, comme on m' impute icy, que Dieu ne peut point donner des bornes à l'Exendus de la matière, mais il y a de l'apparence qu' il ne le veut point, Gequ'il a trouvé mieux de ne luy en point donner.

174. De l'étendue à la dutée, non valet consequentia. Quand l'étendus de la matiere n' duroit point de bornes, il ne s'ensais point que sa durée n'en uit pus non plus ; pas même en arriere, t'est à dire qu' elle n' ait point eu de commencement. Si la nature des choses dans le total est de croitre uniformément en perfection, l'Univers des éteatures doit avoir commenté. Amsi il y aura des Raifons pour limiter la durée des choses, quand même il n'y en auroit point pour en limiter l'étendue. De plus, le commencement du Monde ne deroge point d' influitté de sa durée à parte post, où dans la suite : mais les bornes de l'Univers derogeroient à l'infinité de son étendue! Ainsi il effliplus raisonnable d'en poser uis commencement, que d' en admettre des bornes; à fin de conserver dans l'un & dans l'autre le caractere d'im Auteur infini.

75 Cependant eeun qui ont admis l'éter nite du Monde, ou, du moins, comme ent 1 10 1 .Q & fait 2006

Thing that is possible, but he will do only what is best. And therefore I don't say, as the Author here will have it, that God cannot limit the Extension of Matter; but 'tis likely he will not do it, and that he has thought it better to fet no Bounds to Matter.

74. From Extension to Duration, non valet consequentia. Though the Extension of Matter were unlimited, yet it would not follow that its Duration would be also unlimited; nay, even a parte ante, it would not follow, that it had no Beginning. If it is the Nature of Things in the whole, to grow uniformly in Perfection; the Universe of Creatures must have had a Beginning. And therefore, there will be Reafons to limit the Duration of Things, even though there were none to limit their Extention. Belides, the World's having a Beginning, does not derogate from the linfinity of its Duration a parte post; but Bounds of the Universe would derogate from the Infinity of its Extension. therefore it is more reasonable to admit a Beginning, of the World, than to admit any Bounds of it; that the Character of its infinite Author, may be in Both Re-

see spreterved. The seems of th the Eternity of the World, or, at least, (as some famous Divines have done, the poffibility

232 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

fait des Theologiens velebres, la possibilité de l'éternité du Monde; n'ont point nié pour cela sa dependance de Dieu, comme on le leur impute icy sans sondement.

Sur § 22 & 23.

ment, que, selon moy, tout ce que Dieu peut faire, doit être fait necessairement. Comme si l'on ignoroit que j'ay resuté cela solidement dans la Theodicee, & que j'ay renverse l'opinion de ceux qui soutienment qu'il n'y a rien de possible que ce qui arrive essettivement; comme ont sait deja quelques anciens. Philosophes, &, entre autres, Diodore chez Ciceron. On consond lu necessité morale, qui vient du choix du meilleur, avec la necessité absolue; on consond la volonté avec la puissance de Dieu: Il peut produire tout possible; ou ce qui n'implique point de contradiction; mais il veut produire le meilleur entre les possibles. Voyés en ce qui a été dit cy-dessus, No. 9: *

77. Dieu n'est donc point un Agent Necessaire en produisant les Creatures, pais qu'il agit par Choix. Cependant de qu' on adjoute icy, est mal sondé, qu' un Agent Necessaire ne seroit point un Agent, Ou prouonte souvent bardinent & sans sondement,

emico A Clivem

deny its dependence upon God; so the Author here lays to their Charge, without any Ground.

To § 22, 23.

76. He here futther objects, without any Reason, that, according to my Opinia on, whatever God can do, he must needs have done. As if he was ignorant, that I have folidly confuted this Notion in my Theodicae; and that I have overthrown the Obinion of these, who maintain that there is nothing possible but what really happens; as some ancient Philosophers did. and among others Diodorus in Cicro. The Author confounds Moral Necessay which proceeds from the Choice of what is Reft. with Absolute Necessity: He confounds the Will of God, with his Power. God can produce every Thing that is possible, or whatever does not imply a Contradiction; but he wills only to produce what is the Best among Things possible. See about has been faid above, Numb. 9. God is not therefore an necessary

Agent in producing Greatures, fince he acts with Chairs in Mowever, what the Author adds hates is ill-grounded, was that a Necessary Agent would not be an Agent at all. He frequently affirms Things boldly,

8 .3

234 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. Leibuitz.

† contre moy des theses en avançant † des theses qu' on ne sauroit prouver.

Sur § 24 —— 28.

78. On s'excuse de n'appir point dit que l'Espace est le sensorium de Dieu, mais seulement comme son sensorium. Il semble que l'un est auss peu convanable, or aussi pau intalligible que l'autre.

na men e Storigiage y fila evid i

79. Il. Tilgace n' est pas la place de sentes choses car il n' est pas la place de Dieu; autrement minid une shofe coëternelle à Dieu, é independante de luy. É même de laquelle il dependreit s' il à hestimade place.

82. Si

boldly, and without any ground; advancing Notions which cannot be proved.

To \$ 24 -- 38

78. The Author alledges, it was not affirmed that Space is God's Senfavium, but only as it were his Senfavium. The latter frems to be as improper, and as dittle intelligible, as the former.

To: \$ 29.

for it is not the Place of God. Otherwise there would be a thing en-nternal with God, and independent upon him a may, he himself would depend upon the has need of Place.

Bo. Nor do I see, how it can be said, that Space is the Place of Ideas; for Ideas are in the Understanding.

BI. Tis also very strange to say, that the Soul of Manie the Soul of the Images it perceives. The Images, which are in the Understanding, are in the Mind. But if the Mind was the Soul of the Pauges, they would then be entrinsick to it. And if the Author means corporal Images, how then with he have a buman Mind to be the Soul of those Images, they being only transient Impressions in a Body belonging to that Souling.

الداني النقا

236 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

Monde, par le moyen d' un sensorium; il semble que les choses agissent sur luy, & qu' ainsi il est tomme en conçoit l' Ame du Monde. On m' impute de repeter les objections; sur sur préndre connoissance des reponses ; mais je ne voy point qu' on ait satisfait d'cette dissipulté ; on feroit mieux de rendriche tout à fait di se sensorium pretendu.

Sur \$ 300

83. On parle comme si l'on n' entendoit point comment selon moy l'Ame est un principe representatif, c'est à dise, comme si l'ann' avoit jumnis oüi parler de mon harmonie préétablié.

84. Je ne demeure point d'actorde des: notions vulgaires, compe sa les Images des choses étoient transportées, (conveyed) par: les Organes jusqu' à l' Amers! Car il. n' eft. point contevable par quelle ouvertire, ou par quelle voiture, ce uransport des integes deprais l'Organie jusques dans l'Ame so peut faire. Cette notion de la Philosophie vulgaine, myest point intelligible; comme les nonventin F Carteliens 1: ous affers montes L'on ne fauroit expliquer comment la Substance immitterielle estraffectée par le matiere: O soucenir une ebuse non intelligible. là dessis, sic sesti recodrit à la notion Scholassique chimerique de je ne say quelles: Especes. 2. 82. If 'tis by means, of a Senforium. that God perceives what passes, in the World; it feems that Things aft upon him and that therefore he is what we mean by a Soul of the World. The Author charges me with repeating Objections. without taking notice of the Answers; but I don't see that he has answered this Diffigulty. They had better wholly lay afide this pretended Senfarium.

in the first of the Board Total and the second with the contract of the contra

82. The Author speaks as if he did not understand, how, according to my Opinion, the Soul is a Representative Principle. Which is, as if he had never heard of my

* Pre-established Harmony. The said + See Ap-

84. I don't affent to the vulgar Notions, pendix, that the Images of Things are convered by the Organs [of Sense] to the Soul. For, it is not conceivable by what Passage, or by what Means of Conveyance, these Images can be carried from the Organ; to the Soul. This Vulgar Notion in Philosophy is not intelligible, as the new Cartelians have sufficiently shown. It cannot be explained how Immaterial Substance is affe-Ged by Matter: And to maintain an unintelligible Notion thereupon, is having recourse to the Scholastick Chimerical Notion of I know not what inexplicable, Species Intentionales, passing from the Organs

Especes intentionelles inexplicables, qui paffent des Organes dans l'Amei Cec Cartes siens ont oil la difficulté, mais ils ne l'ont point resolve ; ils one en receirs dun von cours it de Dieu, qui seroit miracultus en effect: Mais je croit d'avoir dime la veritable solution de cer Enigme. Emilian

85. De dire que Dioux disperne les elebses que se passent, perce que n'est present aux Substances, & non pue + pur une production continuelle, c'est dire des choses non intelligibles. La simple presence, ou la proximité de coëxistence, ne suffit point pour entendre comment te qui se passe dons un Etre, dvit repondre à ce qui se passe dans un autre Etre. come the book is at the co

: 86. Par après é lest donner justement dans la doctrine qui fait de Dieu V' Ame du Monde, prisque en le finit sentir les choses non par par la dépendance qui elles ont de luy, c'est à dire par la production continuelle de ce qu' il y a de bon co de parfait en elles ; mais par une manière de Jointinent comme I'on s' imagine que noftre Ame fent ve qui se passe dans le Corps. C'est inen. degrader la connoissance divine.

2187. Dans la verité des choses, cette mamêtre de senvir est onvierement chimeetique.

de Dien tout particulier, 777 † per la slependance que la cominuacion de leur estistence a de luy, & qu' on peut dire d'envelopper une production oc.

Difficulty; but they could not explain it. They had recouse to a Concountral God, which would really be misscalous; But, I think, I bave given the true Subtions of that Enigma.

for in the World beamle he in prefere to the Things, and not by a continual Broduction of them; is faying fointhing unintelligible. A mere Prefere or Proximity of Co-existence, is not sufficient to make us understand, how that which passes in One Being, should answer to what passes in another.

That Opinion, which makes God to be the Soul of the World; seeing it supposes God to perceive Things, not by wheir dependence upon him, that is, by a continual Production of what is good and perfect in them; but by a Kind of Perception, such as that by which Men show Our Soul perceives what passes in the Body. This is a degrading of God's Knowledge very much.

Penception, is wholly Chimerical, and has no place even in Human Souls. They perceive what passes without them, by what passes without them, by what passes within them; answering to the

Gen'apasmene lieu dans les Ames. Elles fentend resquir se passe horse d'elles, par ce qui Je puffi on alles, repondent aux chofes de debors; es viertu de l'hammonie que Dien a précomblie, pur la plus belle & la plus admirable de toutes ses productions ; qui fait que chaque substance simple, en vertu de sa natura, est, pour dire ainsi, una concentration & un minoir vivant de tout l'Univers fisition fon point de vede :: Ce qui est encore dine des plus belles, O des plus indontestables Preuves de l'Existence de Dieu; prifqu' il n' y:a que Dieu; i c' est à dire la saufe commune, qui puisse faire catte batmonie des choses. Mais Dieu même ne peut sentir les choses par le moyen par lequel il des fait fentir aux autres. Il les seht, parsati qui il lest sapable des produirence monent, So il rie des feroit podut Santin aux autres, s' il ne les produiseit: lux même toutes con-Sentantes, & il n' avoit sinsi en sog leur representation, non comme venant dielles, mais paros que elles viennent de luy; de parcequ'il en est la consachiriente & exemplaire. .. Il les fent parte qu' elles vianuent de huy, s'il est permis de dire qu' il les sent; ce qui ne se doit, qu' en depouillant le terme de son impersection, qui semble signifier qu' elles agistant for logs. Ellas sont, an lay font connues, parce qu'il lès entend & veut; & pierce quie ce qui il veui, cest autient que ce qui existe. Ce qui paroist d'autant plus, parce qu' il les fait sentir les unes autres;

Things without; in virtue of the + Har. + See Apmany, which God has pre-established by the No. 5. most beautiful and the most admirable of all his Productions; whereby | every fien- | See Apple Substance is by its nature, (if one may pendix. To say,) a concentration, and a living mirror of the subale Universe, * according to its Point * See Ap. of view. Which is likewise one of the pendix, most beautiful and most undeniable Proofs No. 11. of the existence of God; since none but God, viz. the universal Cause, can produce such a Harmony of things. But God himself cannot perceive things by the same Means whereby he makes other Beings perceive them. He perceives them, because he is able to produce That Means. And Other Beings would not be caused to perceive them, if he himself did not produce them all barmonious, and had not therefore in himself a representation of them; Not as if that Representation came from the Things, but because the Things proceed from Him, and because he is the Essicient and Exemplary Cause of them. He perceives them, because they proceed from him; if one may be allowed to fay, that he perceives them: Which ought not to be faid, unless we divest That Word of its imperfection; for else it seems to signify, that things act upon him. They exist, and are known to him, because he understands and wills them; and because what he wills. is the same, as what exists. Which appears

242 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

ment par la suite des Natures, qu' il leur a données une sois pour toutes, & qu' il leur a données une sois pour toutes, & qu' il ne sait qu' entretenir suivant les loix de chacune à part, les quelles bien que différentes aboutissent à une correspondence exacte des resultats. Ce qui passe toutes les Idées qu' on a eu vulgairement de la Persection Divine & des Ouvrages de Dieu, & † l'élove au plus baut degré; comme M. Bayle a bien recomm, quoy qu' il ait crû sans sujet que cela passe le possible.

Sainte Ecriture, suivant lequel Dieu repose des ses Ouvrages; que d'en inserer qu'il n'y a plus de production continuée. Il est vray qu'il n'y a point de Production de Substances simples nouvelles; mais on auroit tort d'en inserer que Dieu n'est maintenant dans le Monde, que comme l'on conçoit que l'Ame est dans le Corps, en le gouvernant seulement par sa Presence, sans un concours necessaire pour lui faire continuer son Existence.

pears so much the more, because he makes them to be perceived by one another; and makes them perceive one another in confequence of the Natures which he has given them once for all, and which he Keeps up only, according to the laws of every one of them severally; which, though different one from another, yet terminate in an exact correspondence of the Results of the whole. This surpasses all the Ideas, which Men have generally framed concerning the divine Perfections, and the works of God; and raises [our notion of] them, to the highest degree; as Mr. Bayle has acknowledged, though he believed, without any ground, that it exceeded possibility.

Scripture, wherein God is faid to have rested from his Works, that there is no longer a continual Production of them; would be to make a very ill use of that Text. Tis true, there is no production of New Simple Substances: But it would be wrong to infer from thence, that God is now in the World, only as the Soul is conceived to be in the Body, governing it merely by his presence, without any concourse being necessary to commune its Exist

stance.

Sur § 31.

89. L' Harmonie ou Correspondence enere l' Ame & le Corps, n' est pas un Miracle perpetuel, mais l' Effect ou suite d' un Miracle principene fait dans la Creation des choses, comme sont toutes les choses naturelles. Il est vray que c' est une Merveille perpetuelle, comme sont beaucoup de choses naturelles.

90. Le mot d'Harmonie préétablie est un Terme de l'Art, je l'avoue; mais non pas un Terme qui n'explique rien; puisqu' il est expliqué fort intelligiblement, & qu' on n'oppose rien qui marque qu'il y ait

de la difficulté.

Atance simple, Ame ou veritable Monade, est telle que son état suivant est une Consequence de son état precedent; voilà la cause de l'Harmonie toute trouvée. Car Dieu n'a qu' à faire que la Substance simple soit une spis & d'abord une Representation de l'Univers selon son point de veue: suisque de cela seul il suit qu' elle le sera parpetuellement; & que toutes les Substances supples aurone tousjours une Harmonie entre elles, parcequ' elles representent tous jours le même Univers.

12 7

To \$ 31.

89. The Harmony, or Correspondence between the Soul and the Body, is not a perpetual Miracle; but the effect or confequence of an original Miracle worked at the Creation of things; as all natural things are. Though indeed it is a perpetual Wonder, as many natural things are.

90. The word, Presestablished Harmony, is a Term of Art, I confess; but 'tis not a Term that explains nothing, since it is made out very intelligibly; and the Author alledges nothing, that shows there is any difficulty in it.

91. The nature of * every simple Sub- * See Apflance, Soul, or true Monad, being such, Pendix,
that its following State is a consequence of
the preceding one; here now is the cause
of the Harmony sound out. For God needs
only to make a simple Subflance become
once and from the beginning, a representation of the Universe, * according to its Point * See Apof view; Since from thence alone it fol-pendix,
lows, that it will be so perpetually; and
that all simple Subflances will always have
a Harmony among themselves, because they
always represent the same Universe.

or real of the Right of the Eog

Sur § 32.

92. Il est vray que, selommoy, l'Ame ne trouble point les loix du Corps, ny le Corps celles de l'Ame; & qu'ils st accordent feulement; l'un agissant libroment, suivant les Regles des Caufes finales ; & l' autro agissant machinalement, suivant les Loix des Causes efficientes. Mais cela ne deroge point à la Liberté de nos Ames, comme on le prend icy. Car tout Agent qui agit suivant les oauses finales, est libre, quoyqu' il arrive qu' il s' accorde avec celuy qui n' agit que par des Causes efficientes sans conneissance, ou par Machine; parceque Dieu prevoyant ce que la cause libre seroit, a reglé d'abord sa Machine en sorte qu' elle ne puisse manquer de s' y occorder. Monsieur Jaquelot a fort bien resolu cette difficulté dans un de ses Livres contre M. Bayle; & j'en y cite le Passage dans la Theodicée, Part I. S 63. I'm parleray encore plus bas, Nomb. 124.

Sur § 33-

93. Je n'admets point que toute Act on donne une nouvelle force à ce qui patit. Il arrive souvent dans le concours des Corps, que chacun garde sa force; comme lors que

To \$ 32.

92. Tie true, that, according to Me, the Soul * does not diffurb the Laws of the * See Ap-Body, nor the Body those of the Soul; and No 5. that the Soul and Body do only agree together; the one acting freely, according to the rules of Final Causes; and the other afting + mechanically, according to the + See Ablaws of Efficient Caules. But this does pendix, not derogate from the Liberty of our Souls; No 13. as the Author here will have it. For, every Agent which acts according to Final Caufes, is free, though it happens to agree with an Agent acting only by Efficient Causes without Knowledge, or mechanically; because God, foreseeing what the free Cause would do, did from the beginning regulate the Machine in such manner, that it cannot fail to agree with that free Cause. Mr. Jaquelet has very well resolved this difficulty, in one of his Books against Mr. Bayle: and I have cited the Passage, in my Theodicas, Part J. \$63. I shall speak of it again below, Numb. 124.

To \$ 33.

93. I don't admit, that every action gives a new force to the Patient. It frequently happens in the concourse of Bodies, that each of them preserves its force; as R 4 when

248 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIENITZ.

que deux corps durs égaux concourent directement. Alors la seule Dirèction est changée, sans qu'il y ait du changement dans la force; chacun des Corps prenant la Direction de l' autre, & retournant avec la même vitesse

qu'il avoit deja eue.

94. Cependant je n' ay garde de dire qu'il soit surnaturel de donner une nouvelle force à un Corps; car je reconnois qu' un Corps reçoit souvent une nouvelle force d' un autre Corps, qui en perd autant de la sienne: Mais je dis seulement qu' il est surnaturel que tout l' Univers des Corps reçoive une nouvelle force; & ainsi qu' un corps gagne de la Force, sans que d' autres en perdent autants. C'est pourquoy je dis aussi, qu' il est insoutenable que l' Ame donne de la Force au Corps; car alors tout l'Univers des Corps recevoit une nouvelle force.

95. Le Dilemme qu' on fait icy, est mal fondé, que selon moy il faut ou que l' Homme agisse surnaturellement, ou que l' Homme soit une pure Machine comme une Montre. Car l' Homme n' agit point surnaturellement, & son Corps est veritablement une Machine, & n' agit que machinalement; mais son Ame ne laisse pas d'étre une cause libre.

when two equal hard Bodies meet directly. Then the Direction only is changed, without any change in the Force; each of the Bodies receiving the Direction of the other, and going back with the same furifiness it came.

However, I am far from faying that it is fupernatural to give a new force to a Body; for I acknowledge that One Body does frequently receive a new Force from another, which holes as much of its own. But I say only, 'tis Supernatural that the whole Universe of Bodies should receive a new force; and consequently that one body should acquire any new force, without the loss of as much in others. And therefore I say likewise, 'tis an indefensible opinion to suppose the Soul gives force to the Body; for then the whole Universe of Bodies would receive a new force.

grounded; viz. that according to Me, either a Man must act Supernaturally, or be a mere Machine, like a Watch. For, Man does not act Supernaturally: And his Body is truely a Machine, acting only mechanically; and yet his Soul is a free Cause.

250 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

Sur § 34 & 35.

96. Je me remets aussi à ce qui a été ou sera dit dans ce present Papier, Nomb. 82, 86, & 111; touchant la comparaison entre Dieu & l'Ame du Monde; & comment le sentiment qu' on opposé au mien, fait trop approcher l'un à l'autre.

Sur \$ 36.

97. Je me rapporte aussi à ce que je viens de dire touchant l'Harmonie entre l'Ame & le Corps. Nomb, 89, & seqq;

Sur \$ 37.

198. On me dit que l'Ame n'est pas dans le Cerveau, mais dans le Sensorium, sans dire ce que c'est que ce Sensorium. Mais supposé que ce Sensorium soit étendu, comme je crois qu' on l'entend; c'est tousjours la même difficulte, & la Question revient si l'Ame est diffuse par tout cet Etendu, quelque grand ou quelque petit qu'il soit. Car le plus ou moins de grandeur, n'y fait rien.

Sur § 38.

1 99. Je n'entreprends pas icy d'établir ma Dynamique, ou ma Doctrine des Forces:

To \$ 34, and 35.

fhall be faid in this Paper, Numb, 82, 86, and 111; concerning the comparison between God and a Soul of the World; and how the opinion contrary to mine, brings the one of thele too near to the other.

To \$ 36.

97. I here also refer to what I have before said, concerning the *Harmony* between the *Soul* and the *Body*, Numb. 89, &c.

98. The Author tells us, that the Soul is not in the Brain, but in the Senforium; without faying What that Senforium is. But supposing That Senforium to be extended, as I believe the Author understands it; the same difficulty still remains, and the Question returns, Whether the Soul be diffused through that whole Extension, be it great or small. For, more or less in bigness, is nothing to the purpose here.

3 7 7 7 7 To \$ 38.

my Dynamicks, or my Doctrine of Forces:

This

Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

Ce lieu n'y seroit point propre. Cependant je puis fort bien repondre à l'Objection qu' on me fait icy. F avois soutenu que les Forces activés se conservent dans le Monde. On m' objecte, que deux Corps Mols ou nonélastiques, concourant entre eux, perdent de leur force. Je reponds que non. Il est vray que les Touts la perdent par rapport à leur mouvement total; mais les Parties la regaiagitées vent, étant * agitées par la force du concours. Ainsi ce defaut n' arrive qu'en apparence. Les Forces ne sont point detruites, mais dissipées parmy les Parties monues. Ce n' est pas les perdre, mais c' est faire comma font ceux qui changent la grosse Monnoye en petite. Je demeure cependant d'accord, que la quantité du monvement ne demeure point la même; & en cela j'approuve ce qui se tlit, pag, 341 de l'Optique de M. Newton, qu' on cite icy. Mais j' ay montré ailleurs, qu'il y a de la difference entre la quantité du mouvement & la quantité; de

Sur § 39.

+ decroifiois

la force.

rement

100. On m' avoit squtenu que la Forca + se diminuoit naturollement dans l'Univers corporel, & que cela venoit de la dependance des Choses ; (32me papier, sur S 12 & 14.) T avois demande dans ma 3mt repontes qu' en prouvat que seidefaut est une suite de la dependance des Choses Que esquive This would not be a proper Place for it. However, I can very well answer the Obiection here brought against me. I have affirmed that * Active Forces are preferved in *See above, the World [without diminution.] The Author on \$ 13, objects, that two Soft or Un-elastick Bodies of Dr. meeting together, lose some of their force. Clarke's Third I answer, No. Tis true, their Wholer lose Reply. it with respect to their Total Motion; but: their Rarts receive it, being shaken by the force of the Concourse. And therefore That loss of Force, is only in appearance. The forces are not deflroyed, but scattered among the small pares. The Bodies do not lose their forces; but the case here is the fame, as when Men change great Money into small. However, I agree that the quantity of Motion does not remain the fame; And herein I approve what Sir Ifanc Newton fays, page 341 of his Opticks, which the Author here quotes. But I have shown elsewhere, that there is a difference between the quantity of Motion, and the quantity of Force.

To \$ 39.

The Author minimined against me. that Force does naturally leffen in the mast Which is terial Universe; and that This arises from Mr. Leibthe dependence of things, (Third Reply, Fourth S 13 and 14.) In my + Third Angeber, Paper, in this Col-l desired him to prove that this imper-lettion. : N.,

fection

254 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. Leibnerz.

esquive de satissaire à ma demande; en sa jestant sur un includent : & en niant que ce seit un defaut. Mais que ce soit un defaut ou non, il falloit prouver que c'est une suite de la dependance des Choses.

101. Cependant il faut bien, que ce quit rendroit la Machine du Monde aust imparfaite que celle d'un mauvais Herloger, soit un desaut.

saite de l'inertie de la Matiero; mais s'est ce qu' on ne prouvera pas non plus. Gette inertie mise en avant, et nommée par Keplar, et repêtée par Des Cantes*, et que j' ay employée dans la Theodicée pour donnier una † Image de l'Impersedion naturelle des Creatures; fait seulement que les vitesses sont diminuées quand les Matières sont augmentées, mais c'est sans aucune diminuelle des Forces.

Sur § 40

103. J' avois souvenu, que la dependance de la Machine du monde d'un Auteur Dinis, est plustost cause que ce defaus n'y est point, & que l'ouvrage n'a point bé-

^{*} dans les Lettres,

Timage, & en même temps un échantillon,

fection is a confequence of the dependence of things. He avoids answering my demand; by falling upon an incident, and denying this to be an imperfection. But whether it be an imperfection, or not, be should have proved that 'tis a confequence of the dependence of things.

the Machine of the World as imperfect, as that of an unskilful Watchmaker, surely

must needs be an imperfection.

Consequence of the Inertia of Matter. But This also, he will not prove. That Inertia, alledged here by bim, mentioned by Keplen, repeated by Cartefius, and made use of by Me in my Theodicaa, in order to give a notion of the natural imperfection of Creatures; has no other effect, than to make the Velocities diminish, when the Quantities of Matter are encreased: But this is without any diminution of the Forces.

Ta. \$ 40.

the Machine of the World upon its divine Author, is rather a reason why there can be no such imperfection in it; and that the Work of God does not want to be fat right again; that it is not liable to be disordered; and lastly, that it cannot bessen in Perfection. Let any one guess now, how the

256 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

soin d'être redresse ; qu' il n' est point sujet d'sei detraquer; & ensm, qu'il ne sauroit diminuer en Persession. Je donne maintemant à déviner aux Gens, comment on en peut instre dontre may, comme on fait icy, qu' il faut, si cela est, que le Monde materiel soit insini & éternel, sans aucun commencement; & que Dieu doit tousjours avoir créé autant d' bommes & d'autres especes, qu' il est possible de créer.

Sur § 41.

104. Je ne dis point que l'Espace est un Ordre ou Situation qui rend les choses situables; se seroit parler galimatias. On n' a qu'à considerer mes propres paroles, & à les joindre à ce que je viens de dire cy dessus, Nomb. 47 3 pour montrer comment l'Esprit vient à sé former l'idée de l'Espace, sans qu' il faille qu' il y ait un étre réel & absolu qui y reponde bors de l'Esprit & bors des rapports. Je ne dis donc point, que l' Espace est un Ordre ou Situation, mais un Ordre des Situations, ou selon lequel les Situations sont rangées; or que l'Espace abstrait est vet Ordre des Situations cons çues comme possibles. Ainsi c'est quelque chose d'idéal. Mais il semble que on ne me veut point entendre. Fay repondu deja wy, Nomb. 54, à l' Objection qui pretend qu'un Ordre n'est point capable de quantité.

105. On

Author can hence infer against me, as he does, that, if this be the Case, then the material World must be infinite and eternal, without any beginning; and that God must always have created as many Men and other Kinds of Creatures, as can possibly be created.

To \$ 41.

104. I don't say, that Space is an Order or Situation, which makes Things capable of being situated: This would be Nonsense. Any one needs only consider my own Words, and add them to what I faid above, (Numh. 47.) in order to show how the Mind comes to form to it self an Idea of Space, and yet that there needs not be any real and absolute Being answering to that Idea, distinct from the Mind, and from all Relations. I don't say therefore, that Space is an Order or Situation, but an Order of Situations; or [an Order] according to which, Situations are disposed; And that abstract Space is That Order of Situations, when they are conceived as being possible. Space is therefore something mere-[17] Ideal. But, it seems, the Author will pot understand me. I have already, in this Paper, (Numb. 54.) answered the Objection, that Order is not capable of Quantity.

258 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

105. On objecte icy, que le Temps ne fauroit être un Ordre des choses successives, parce que la quantité du temps peut devenir plus grande ou plus petite, l'ordre des successions demeurant le même. Je reponds que cela n'est point: Car si le temps est plus grand, il y aura plus d'états successifs pareils interposés; & s'il est plus petit, il y en aura moins; puisqu'il n'y a point de vuide ny de condensation ou penetration, pour ainsi dire, dans les temps, non plus que dans les lieux.

* Je foutiens que

106. * Il est vray que sans les Creatures, l'immensité & l'éternité de Dieu ne laisse-roient pas de subsister; mais sans aucune dependance ny des temps ny des lieux. S'il n'y avoit point de Creatures, il n'y auroit ny Temps ny Lieu, & par consequent point d'Espace actuel. L'immensité de Dieu est independante de l'Espace, comme l'éternité de Dieu est independante du Temps. Elles † partent que Dieu seroit present & caëxistant à toutes les choses qui existeroient. Ainsi je n'admets point ce qu' on avance isp, que si Dieu seul existoit, il y auroit Temps & Espace, comme à present. Au lieu qu' alors, à mon avis, ils ne seroient que dans les idées, comme des simples possibilités. L'immensité & l'éternité de Dieu sont quelque chôse de plus éminent que la durée & l'éterniue des Creatures;

⁺ porsent seulement à l'egard de ces deux ordies des

105. The Author objects here, that Time cannot be an Order of successive Things, because the Quantity of Time may become greater or less, and yet the Order of Successions continue the same. I anfwer; this is not so. For if the Time is greater, there will be More successive and like States interposed; and if it be less, there will be fewer; seeing there is no Vacuum, nor Condensation, or Penetration, (if I may to speak,) in Times, any more than in Places.

106. Tis true, the Immensity and Eternity of God would subsist, though there were no Creatures; but those Attributes would have no dependence either on Times or Places. If there were no Creatures, there would be neither Time nor Place. and consequently no actual Space. Immensity of God is independent upon Space, as his Eternity is independent upon Time. These Attributes signify only, that God would be present and co-existent with all the Things that should exist. therefore I don't admit what's here alledged. that if God existed alone, there would be Time and Space as there is now: Whereas then, in my Opinion, they would be only in the Ideas of God as mere Possibilities. The Immensity and Eternity of God, are things more transcendent, than the Dutation and Extension of Creatures; not only with respect to the Greatness, but also to the

260 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIENITZ.

Creatures; non seulement par rapport à la grandeur, mais encore par rapport à la nature de la chose. Ces attributs Divins n' ont point besoin de choses bors de Dieu, comme sont les lieux & temps actuels. Ces verités ont été assés reconnues par les Theologiens & par les Philosophes.

Sur \$ 42.

107. J' avois soutenu que l'operation de Dieu, par laquelle il redresseroit la machine du monde corporel, prête par sa nature (à ce qu' on pretend) à tomber dans le repos, seroit un Miracle. On a repondu, que ce ne seroit point une operation Miracu-leuse, parce qu' elle seroit ordinaire, & doit arriver assés souvent. F ay repliqué, que ce n'est pas l'usuel ou non-usuel, qui fait le Miracle proprement dit, ou de la plus grande efpece, mais de surpasser les forces des creatures: Et que c'est le sentiment des Theologiens & des Philosophes. Et qu' ainsi on m' accorde au moins, que ce qu' on introduit, & que je desapprouve, est un Miracle de la plus grande Espece, suivant la notion receue; c'est à dire, qui surpasse les forces créées; & que c' est justement ce que tout le monde tâche d'eviter en Philosophie. On me repond maintenant, que c'est appeller de la Raison à l' opinion vulgaire. Mais je replique encore, que cette opinion vulgaire, suivant laquelle il faut éviter, en Philosophant, autant qu'il

Mr. LEIBNITZ's Fifth Paper. 261

the Nature of the Things. Those Divine Attributes do not imply the Supposition of Things extrinsick to God, such as are actual Places and Times. These Truths have been sufficiently acknowledged by Divines and Philosophers.

To § 42.

107. I maintained, that an Operation. of God, by which he should mend the Machine of the material World, * tending *See above, in its Nature (as this Author pretends) to the Note on lose all its Motion, would be a Miracle. Dr. Clark's His Answer was; that it would not be a Thifd Remiraculous Operation, because it would be ply. usual, and must frequently happen. I reply'd; that 'tis not Usualness or Unusu-, alues, that makes a Miracle properly so called, or a Miracle of the highest Sort; but it's surpassing the Powers of Creatures; and that this is the [general] Opinion of Divines and Philosophers: And that therefore the Author acknowledges at least, that the thing He introduces, and I disallow. is, according to the received Notion, a Miracle of the highest Sort, that is, one which furpasses all created Powers: And that this is the very Thing which all Men endeavour to avoid in Philosophy. He answers now, that this is appealing from Reason to. vulgar Opinion. But I reply again, that

262 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIENITZ.

se peut, ce qui surpasse les natures des creatures, est tres-raisonnable. Autrement rien na sera si aisé que de rendre raison de tout, en faisant survenir une Divinité, Deum ex machina, sans se soucier des natures des choses,

108. D'ailleurs le sentiment commun des Theologiens ne doit pas être traité simplement en opinion vulgaire. Il fout de grandes raisons pour qu'on ose y contrevenir, et je n'en vois aucune îcy.

pre notion, qui demandoit que le Miraele soit rare; en me reprochant (querque sans fondement,) sur § 31, que l'harmonie prétablie seroit un Miraele perpetuel; si ce n'est qu'on ait voulu raisonner contre mor ad hominem.

Sur § 43.

notes de Miracle ne differe du naturel que dans l'apparence & par rapport à Nous, en sorte que nous appellions seulement miracle ce que nous observons rarement, il n'y aura point de difference interne réclio entre le Miracle & le naturel; & dissille fond des choses, tout sera égulement maturel

this vulgar Opinion, according to which we ought in Philosophy to avoid, as much as possible, what surpasses the Natures of Creatures; is a very reasonable Opinion. Otherwise nothing will be easier than to account for Any thing by bringing in the Deity, Deum ex Machina, without minding the Natures of Things.

108. Besides; the common Opinion of Divines, ought not to be looked upon merely as vulgar Opinion. A Man should have weighty Reasons, before he ventures to contradict it; and I see no such Reasons

here.

rog. The Author seems to depart from his own Notion, according to which a Miracle ought to be unusual; when, in § 31, he objects to me, (though without any Ground,) that the pre-established Harmony would be a perpetual Miracle. Here, I say, he seems to depart from his own Notion; unless he had a Mind to argue against me ad Hominem.

To \$ 43.

Natural, only in Appearance, and with respect to Us; so that we call That only a Miracle, which we seldom see; there will be no internal real Difference, between a Miracle and what is natural; and at the tom, every thing will be etiher equally natural.

264 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. Leibnitz.

turel, ou tout sera également miraculeux. Les Theologiens auront ils raison de s' accommoder du premier, & les Philosophes du second?

Dieu l'Ame du Monde, si toutes ses operations sont naturelles, comme celles que l'Ame exerce dans le Corps ? Ainsi Dieu sera une

partie de la Nature.

Theologie, il faut distinguer entre ce qui est explicable par les Natures & Forces des Greatures, & ce qui n'est explicable que par les forces de la Substance Insinie. Il faut mettre une distance insinie, entre l'operation de Dieu qui va au delà des Forces des Natures; & entre les operations des choses qui suivent les loix que Dieu leur a données, & qu'il les a rendu capables de suivre par leur natures, quoyqu'avec son assistance.

tractions proprement dites, & autres operations inexplicables par les natures des creations inexplicables par les natures des creatures, qu'il faut faire effectuer par miracle, ou recquir aux absurdités, c'est à dire, aux qualités occultes Scholastiques, qu'on commence à nous debiter sous le specieux nom de forces, mais qui nous ramenent dans le royaume des tanebres. C'est, inventa fruge, glándibus yesci.

Mr. LEIBNIT Z's Fifth Paper.

ral, or equally miraculous. Will Divines like the former, or Philosophers the latter?

tend to make God the Soul of the World; if all his Operations are natural, like those of our Souls upon our Bodies? And so God

will be a part of Nature.

Theology, we ought to distinguish between what is explicable by the Natures and Powers of Creatures, and what is explicable only by the Powers of the Infinite Substance. We ought to make an infinite Difference between the Operation of God, which goes beyond the Extent of Natural Powers; and the Operations of Things that follow the Law which God has given them, and which he has enabled them to follow by their natural Powers, though not without his Assistance.

perly so called, and other Operations, pro- * See Apperly so called, and other Operations inex-pendix, plicable by the natural Powers of Creatures; which Kinds of Operations, the Assertors of them must suppose to be effected by Miracles or else have recourse to Absurdities, that is, to the occult Qualities of the Schools; which some Men begin to revive under the specious Name of Forces; but they bring us back again into the Kingdom of Darkness. This is, invental fruge, glandibus vesci.

Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ. 266

114. Du temps * du Chevalier Boyle, & sieur Boyle, d'autres excellens bommes qui fleurissoient en Angleterre † sous Charles II, on n' auroit pas ose nous debiter des notions si creuses. J'espere que ce beau temps re-viendra sous un aussi bon gouvernement que celuy d'à present ||. Le capital de M. Boyle étoit d'inculquer que tout se faisoit mechaniquement dans la Physique. Mais c'est un malheur des bommes, de se degouter enfin de la raison même, & de s' ennuyer de la Les chimeres commencent à revenir, & plaisent parce qu'elles ont quelque chose de merveilleux. Il arrive dans le pays Philosophique ce qui est arrivé dans le pays Poetroue. On s'est lassé des Romans raisonnables, tels que la Clelie Françoise, ou l'Aramene Allemande; & on est revenu depuis quelque temps aux Contes des Fées.

115. Quant aux Mouvemens des corps celestes, & plus encore quant à la formation des plantes & des animaux; il n' y a rien qui tienne du Miracle, excepté le commencement de ces choses. Il organisme des unimaux est un mechanisme qui suppose une Préformation Divine : Ce qui en suit, est purement naturel, & tout à fait

mechanique.

116. Tout

[†] fous les commencemens de & que les esprits un peu trop divertis par le malbeur des temps, retournerone à mieux cultiver les connoissances solides. Le Capital &c.

114. In the time of Mr. Boyle, and other excellent Men, who flourished in England under Charles the IId, no Body would have ventured to publish such Chimerical Notions. I hope, That happy time will return under fo good a Government as the present. Mr. Boyle made it his chief Business to inculcate, that every thing was done mechanically in natural Philosophy. But it is Men's Misfortune to grow, at last, out of Conceit with Reason it self. and to be weary of Light. Chimara's begin to appear again, and they are pleafing because they have something in them that is wonderful. What has happened in Poetry. happens also in the Philosophical World. People are grown weary of rational Romances, such as were the French Clelia, or the German Aramene; and they are become fond again of the Tales of Fairies.

Bodies, and even the Formation of Plants and Animals; there is nothing in them that looks like a Miracle, except their Beginning. The Organism of Animals is a Mechanism, which supposes a Divine Preformation. What follows upon it, is purely

natural, and emirely Mechanical.

268 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

de l'homme, & de tout animal, est aussi mechanique que ce qui se fait dans une Montre. La disserence est seulement telle qu'elle doit être entre une Machine d'une invention Divine, & entre la production d' un Ouvrier aussi borné que l'homme.

Sur § 44.

Theologiens, sur les miracles des Anges. Il ne s'agit que de l'usage du mot. On pourra dire que les Anges sont des miracles, mais moins proprement dits, ou d'un ordre inferieur. Disputer là dessus seroit une question de nom. On pourra dire que cet Ange qui transportoit Habacuc par les airs, qui remuoit le Lac de Bethelda, faisoit un miracle. Mais ce n'estoit pas un miracle du premier rang; car il est explicable par les forces naturelles des Anges superieures aux notres.

Sur \$ 45.

118. J'avois objecté, qu' un Attraction proprement dite, ou à la Scholastique, seroit une operation en distance, sans moyen. On repond icy qu' une Attraction sans moyen seroit une contradiction. Fort bien: mais comment l'entend on donc, quand on veut que

of Man, and of every Animal, is * no less † See Ap-Mechanical, than what is performed in a No 13. Watch. The Difference is only such, as ought to be between a Machine of Divine Invention, and the Workmanship of such a limited Artist as Man is.

To \$ 44.

vines, about the Miracles of Angels. The Question is only about the use of that Word. It may be said that Angels work Miracles; but less properly so called, or of an inferior Order. To dispute about this, would be a mere Question about a Word. It may be said that the Angel, who carried Habakkuk through the Air, and he who troubled the Water of the Pool of Betbesda, worked a Miracle. But it was not a Miracle of the highest Order; for it may be explained by the natural Powers of Angels, which surpass those of Man.

To \$ 45.

118. I objected, that an Attraction, properly so called, or in the Scholastic Sense, would be an Operation at a Distance, without any Means intervening. The Author answers here, that an Attraction without any Means intervening, would be indeed a Contra-

Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

que le Soleil à travers d'un Espace vuide attire le globe de la Terre? Est ce Dieu qui sert de moyen? Mais ce seroit un miracle, s' il y en a jamais eu. Cela surpasseroit les forces des Creatures.

119. Ou sont-ce peut-étre quelques substances immaterielles, ou quelques rayons spirituels, ou quelque accident sans substance, quelque Espèce comme intentionnelle, ou quelque autre je ne say quoy, qui doit faire ce moyen pretendu? choses dont il semble qu' on a encore bonne provision en tête, sans s' essés expliques

120. Ce moyen de communication est (dit on) invisible, intangible, non mechanique. On pouvoit adjouter avec le même droit, inexplicable, non intelligible, precaire, fans

fondement, sans exemple. 11
121. Mais il est regulier, (dit on,) il est constant, & par consequent naturel. Je reponds, qu' il ne sauroit étre regulier sans étre raisonnable; & qu' il ne sauroit étre naturel, sans étre explicable par les natures des creatures.

122. Si ce moyen qui fait une veritable Attraction, est constant, & en même temps inexplicable par les forces des creatures, & s' il est veritable avec cela; c'est un Miracle perpetuel: Et s' il n' est pas misuculeux, Contradiction. Very well! But then what does he mean, when he will have he Sun to attract the Globe of the Earth, through an empty Space? Is it God himself that performs it? But this would be a Miracle, if ever there was any. This would furely exceed the Powers of Creatures.

119. Or, are perhaps some immaterial Substances, or some spiritual Rays, or some Accident without a Substance, or some kind of Species Intentionalis, or some other I know not what, the Means by which this is pretended to be performed? Of which fort of things, the Author feems to have still a good Stock in his Head, without explaining himfelf sufficiently.

120. That Means of communication (lays he) is invisible, intangible, not Mechanical. He might as well have added, inexplicable, unintelligible, precarious, ground-

less, and unexampled.

121. But it is regular, (fays the Author,) it is constant, and consequently natural. I answer; it cannot be regular, without being reasonable; nor natural, unless it can be explained by the Natures of Creatures.

122. If the Means, which causes an Attraction properly so called, he constant, and at the same time inexplicable by the Powers of Creatures, and yet be true; it must be a perpetual Miracle: And if it is

272 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

leux, il est faux. C' est une chose chimerique,

une qualité occulte Scholastique.

allant en rond sans s'écarter par la Tangente, quoyque rien d'explicable ne l'empechât de le faire. Exemple que j'ay dejà allegué, auquel on n'a pas trouvé à propos de repondre, parce qu'il montre trop clairement la difference entre le veritable naturel d'un coté, & entre la qualité occulte chimerique des Ecoles de l'autre côté.

Sur § 46.

124. Les forces naturelles des Corps, sont toutes sounises aux loix mecaniques; & les forces naturelles des Esprits, sont toutes sounises aux loix morales. Les premieres suivent l'ordre des causes efficientes; & les secondes suivent l'ordre des causes sinales. Les premieres operent sans liberté, comme une Montre; les secondes sont exercées avec liberté, quoyqu'elles s'accordent exactement avec cette espece de Montre, qu'une autre cause libre superieure a accommodée avec elles par avance. J'en ay deja parlé, N° 92.

125. Je finis par un point qu' on m' a opposé au commencement de ce quatriéme Papier, où j'ay dejà repondu cy-dessus, Nomb. 18, 19, 20. Mais je me suis reservé d'en dire encore d'avantage en concluant.

On

not miraculous, it is false. 'Tis a Chimerical'
Thing, a Scholastick occult Quality.

a Body going round without receding in the Tangent, though nothing that can be explained, hindered it from receding. Which is an Instance I have already alledged, and the Author has not thought fix to answer it, because it shows too clearly the difference between what is truely Natural on the one side, and a chimerical escult Quality of the Schools on the other.

The state of the s

124. All the natural forces of Bodies, are subject to Mechanical Laws; and all the natural Powers of Spirits, are subject to Moral Laws. The former follow the Order of Efficient Causes; and the latter follow the Order of Final Causes. The former operate without liberty, like a Watch; the latter operate with liberty, though they exactly agree with That Machine, which Another Cause, Free and Superior, has adapted to them before-hand. I have already spoken of this, above, No 92.

thor objected against me at the Beginning of this Fourth Reply: To which I have already given an Answer above, (Numb. 18, 19, 20.) But I deferred speaking more fully upon

274 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

On a prétendu d'abord que je commets une Petition de Principe. Mais de quel Principe, je vous en prie? Plût à Dieu qu'on n'eut jamais supposé des Principes moins clairs. Ce Principe est celuy du besoin d'une Raison suffisante, pour qu'une chose existe, qu'un évenement arrive, qu'une chose existe, qu'un évenement arrive, qu'une verité ait lieu. Est ce un Principe qui a besoin de preuve? On me l'avoit même accordé, ou fait semblant de l'accorder, au second Nombre du 3me papier : Peut être, parce qu'il auroit paru trop choquant de le nieu Mais ou on ne l'a fait qu'en paroles, ou l'on se contredit, ou l'on se retraste.

126. J'ose dire que sans ce grand Principe, on ne sauroit venir à la preuve de l'Existence de Dieu, ny rendre raison de plus

vi en mille occasions? Il est vray qu' on l' a

fieurs autres verités importantes. 127. Tout le monde ne s'en est il-point ser-

oublié par negligence en beaucoup d'autres;
Mais c'est là justement l'origine des Chimetes; comme, par exemple, d'un Temps on d'un Espace absolu réel, du Vuide, dei Atomes, d'une Attraction à la Scholastil

* entre l'que, de l'Instuence Physique * de l'Ame Ame & le ster le Corps, co de mille autres Fictions corps, tant de celles qui sont restées de la fausse persuasion des Anciens, que de celles qu'è à a inventées depuis peu.

upon That Head, to the Conclusion of this Paper. He pretended, that I have been guilty. of a Petitie Principil. But, of What Princia ple, I befeech you? Would to God, less clear Principles had never been laid down The Principle in Question, is the Principle of the want of a sufficient Reason; in order to any thing's existing, in order to any Event's happening, in order to any truth's taking place. Is This a Principle, that wants to be proved ? The Author granted it. or, pretended to grant it, Numb. 2, of bis Third Paper; Possibly, because the denial of it would have appeared too unreafonable. But either he has done it only in words, or he contradicts himself, or retracts, his concession, summer of all that

Principle, one cannot prove the exilence of God, nor account for many other important Truths.

This Principle, upon a thousand occasions? This Principle, upon a thousand occasions? Tis true, it has been neglected, out of carelesines, on many occasions. But That Neglect, has been the true cable of Chimenal; such as are, for influence, an absolute real Time or Space, a Vicumini, Atom, Attraction in the Scholastick sense, a Physical Influence of the Sautower the Body, and a thousand other fidious, enther derived from removement opinions of the Andrews, or lately invented by Modern Philosophers.

276 Cinquieme Ecrit de Mr. LEIBNITZ.

de ce grand Principe, que les Anciens se sont de la moqués de la Declinaison sans sujet des Atomes d'Epicure? Et j'ose dire que l'Attraction à la Scholassique qu'on renouvelle aujourdhuy, & dont on ne se moquoit pas moins il y a 30 ans ou environ, n'a rien de plus raisonnable.

apporter une Instance contre ce grand Principe, un Exemple non contesté, où il manque. Mais on ne l'a jamais fait, & on ne le

fera jamais. Cependant il y a une infinité d'Exemples, où il y roussit dans tous les

reuffic, eas connus où il est employé. Ce qui doit faire ou plustôt eas connus où il est employé. Ce qui doit faire il reuffic jugar raisonnablement, qu' il reussira encore dans tous dans les cas inconnus, ou qui ne deviendront connus que par son moyen; suivant la Maxime de la Philosophie experimentale, qui prosede à posteriori; quand même il ne seroit point d'ailleurs justifié par la pure Raison,

ou à priori.

faire encore d'ailleurs comme Epicure, reduit à nier cet autre grand Principe, qui est celuy de la Contradiction; savoir, que toute Enontration intelligible doit être vraye, ou saufe. Chrysippe s'amusoit à le prouver contre Epicure; mais je ne crois pas d'avoir besoin de l'imiter, quoyque j'aye deja dit

2

128. Was it not upon account of Bpicurus's violating this great Principle, that the Ancients derided his groundless Declination of Atoms? And I dare say, the Scholastick Attraction, revived in our days, and no less derided about thirty Years ago, is not at all more reasonable.

129. I have often defied People to alledge an Instance against that great Principle, to bring any one uncontested Example wherein it fails. But they have never done it, nor ever will. 'Tis certain, there is an infinite number of Instances, wherein it succeeds in all the Known Cases in which it has been made use of. From whence one may reasonably judge, that it will fucceed also in Unknown Cases, or in fuch cases as can only by its means become known: According to the Method of Experimental Philosophy, which proceeds a posteriori; though the Principle were not perhaps otherwise justified by bare Reason, or a priori.

130. To deny this great Principle, is likewife to do as *Epicurus* did; who was reduced to deny That Other great Principle, viz. the *Principle of Contradiction*; which is, that every intelligible Enunciation must be either true, or false. Chrysippus undertook to prove That Principle against *Epicurus*; but I think I need not imitate

278 Cinquième Ecrit de Mr. Le I BN 1-TZ.

dit cy dessus ce qui peut justisser le mien, Esquoyque je puisse encore dire quelque chose là dessus, mais qui seroit peut être trop prosond pour convenir à cette presente contestation. Et je crois que des Personnes raisonnables & impartiales m'accorderont, que d'avoir reduit son Adversaire à nier ce Principe, c'est l'avoir mené ad absurdum.

Action of the problem of the work of the control of

imitate him. I have already faid, what is sufficient to justify mine: And I might say something more upon it; but perhaps it would be too abstruse for this present Dispute. And, I believe, reasonable and impartial Men will grant me, that having forced an Adversary to deny That Principle, is reducing him ad absurdum.



Dr. CLARKE'S

Cinquième Réplique de Mr. CLARKE.

Comme un Discours dissus n'est pas une marque d'un Esprit clair, ni un moyen propre à donner des idées claires aux Lectures; Je tâcherai de resondre à ce cinquième Ecrit d'une maniere distincte. & en aussi peu de mots qu'il me sera possible.

f,—20. I L n'y a aucune * ressemblance entre une Balance mise en mouvement par des Poids ou par une Impulsion, & un Esprit qui se meut, ou qui agit, par la Consideration de certains Motiss. Voici en quoi consiste la Disserence. La Balance est entierement passive, & par consequent sujette à une nécessité absolue : Au lieu que l'Esprit non seulement reçoit une

Impression, mais encore agit; ce qui fait l'
† 5 14 Essence de la Liberté. Supposer † que lors
que differentes manieres d'agir paroissent

| Voicz | Pégalement bonnes, elles ôtent | entierement

Poids également bonnes, elles ôtent || entierement appindit à l'Esprit le pouvoir d'agir, comme les Poids égaux empêchent nécessairement une Balance de se mouvoir; c'est nier qu' un Esprit ait en lui-même un principe d'Action; confondre le pouvoir d'agir, avec l'Impression que les Motifs font sur l'

Esprit,

\$`\$

Dr. CLARKE's Fifth Reply.

AS Multitudes of Words are neither an Argument of clear Ideas in the Writer, nor a proper means of conveying clear Notions to the Reader; I shall endeavour to give a distinct Answer to this Fifth Paper, as briefly as I can.

-20. HERE is no * similia • 53 tude between a Balance being moved by Weights or Impulse, and a Mind moving itself, or alling upon the View of certain Motives. The Difference is, that the one is entirely paffive; which is being subject to absolute Necessity. The other not only is acted upon, bur acts also; which is the effence of Liberty: To + sup- + \$14. pose that an equal apparent Goodness in different Ways of acting, takes away || from | see Apthe Mind all Power of Acting at all, as an pendix, equality of Weights keeps a Balance neces, No 4. farily at Rest; is denying the Mind to have in itself a Principle of Action; and is confounding the Power of Ading, with the Impression made upon the Mind by the Motipe, wherein the Mind is purely pessive. The Motive, or thing considered as in View,

282 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

Esprit, en quoi il est tout à fait passif. Le Mouif, ou la chose que l'Esprit considere, & qu'il s en viio, est quelque chose d'Externe L' Impression que ce motif fait sur l'Esprit, est la qualité perceptive, dans laquelle l' Esprit est passific Paire quelque chose aprez, ou en vertu de cette Perception, est la Faculté de fe mouvoir de foi-même, ou d'agir. Dans tous Ves Agents animez, c'est la Spontaneire; de dens les Agents intelligents; dest proprement ce que nous appellons Liber-L'erreur où l'on tombe sur cette ma. tiere, vient de ce qu' on ne distingue pas foigneusement ces deux choses; de ce que * s s l'on confond * le motif avet le Principe d'action; de ce que l'on pretend que l' Esprit n' a point d' autre Principe d' Action que le Motif, quoique l'Esprit soit tout & Fallif en recevant l'Impression du monf. Cette Doctrine fait croire que l'Esprit n est pas plus actif, que le seroit une Ba-tance, si elle avoit d'ailleurs la Faculté d' +10 + appercevoir les choses: Ce que l'on ne peut sire sans renverser entièrement l'idée de la 18. 17 Liberte. Une Balance poulfée des deux copar une force égale, ou presse des deux ediez par des Poids égaux, ne peut avoir au cun mouvement. Et supposé que cette Ba kince recoive la faculté d'appercevoir, en forte qu' elle scache qu'il tui est impossible

* voiez l' de se mouvoir, ou qu' elle se + susse ce, No12. an simaginant qui elle se meut elle meme 5

is something extrinsick to the Mind: The impression made upon the Mind by That Motive, is the perceptive Quality, in which the Mind is palfive: The Doing of any thing, upon and after, or in consequence of, that perception; this is the Power of Self-Motion, or Action: Which, in All animate Agents, is Spontaneity; and, in moral Agents, is what we properly call Liberty. The not carefully distinguishing these things, but confounding * the Motive with the * 5 15. Principle of Action, and denying the Mind to have any Principle of Action belides the Motive. (when indeed in receiving the impression of the Motive, the Mind is purely passive;) This, I lay, is the Ground of the whole Error; and leads Men to think that the Mind is no more Active, than a Balance would be with the Addition of a Power of Perception: Which is wholly taking away the very Notion of Liberty. A Ba- 12:2* lance pushed on Both sides with equal force, 21,81 or preffed on Both fides with equal Weights, eannot move at all: And supposing the Balance indued with a Power of Perception, to as to be sensible of its own incapacity to move; or so as to + deceive itself + see Apwith an imagination that it moves itself, pendix, when indeed it is only moved; it would be No 12. exactly in the fame state, wherein this learned Author supposes a free Agent to be in all cases of absolute Indifference. But the Faltacy plainly lies here: The Balance, for

284 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

quoi qu' elle n' ait qu' un mouvement communiqué; elle se trouveroit précisément dans le même état, où le sçavant Auteur suppose que se trouve un Agent libre, dans tous les cas d' une Indifference absolue. Voici en quoi consiste la fausseté de l'Argument, dont il s' agit ici. La Balance, faute d' avoir en elle même un Principe d'action, ne peut se mouvoir lors que les Poids sont égaux : Mais un Agent Libre, lors qu'il se presente deux ou plusieurs manieres d'agir également raisonnables & parfaitement semblables, conserve encore en lui même le pouvoir d'agir, parce qu'il a la faculté de se mouvoir. plus, cet Agent libre peut avoir de très-bonnes & de très-fortes Raisons, pour ne pas s' abstenir entierement d'agir; quoique peut être il n'y ait aucune Raison, qui puise déterminer qu' une certaine maniere d' agir vant mieux qu' une autre. On ne peut \$ 16,17, danc soutenir *que, supposé que deux differen-18, 19; & tes manieres de placer certaines particules de Matiere fussent également bonnes & raisonnables, Dieu ne pourreit absolument, ni conformément à sa sagesse, les placer d'aucune de ces deux manieres, fante d'une Raison suffisante qui put le déterminer à choisir l' une préferablement à l'autre; on ne peut, dis-je, spûtenir une telle chose, sans faire Dieu un Etre purement passif; & par conséquent il ne seroit point Dieu, ou le Gonverneur du Monde. Et quand on nie la possibilité de cette Supposition, sçavoir, qu'il peut

want of having in Itsalf a Principle or Power of Action, cannot move at all when the Weights are equal: But a Free Agent, when there appear two, or more, perfectly alike reasonable ways of acting; has still with. in itself; by virtue of its Self-Motive Principle, a Power of alling: And it may have very firing and good Reafons, not to for-bear acting at all; when yet there may be no possible reason to determine one particular Way of doing the thing, to be better than another. To affirm therefore * that, * 5 16,17 fupposing two different ways of placing cer- 18, 19, tain particles of Matter were equally good and 69. and reasonable, God could neither wifely nor poffibly place them in either of those ways, for want of a fufficient Weight to determine him which way he should chuse; is making God not an Adive, but a Paffive Being? Which is, not to be a God, or Governor, at all. And for denying the Polfibility of the Supposition, that there may be two equal Parts of Matter, which may with equal fitness be transposed in situation; no other reason can be alleged, but this petitio Principii, that Then this Learned | 5 20. Writer's Notion of a sufficient Reason would not be well-grounded. For otherwise, bom can any Man say, that 'tis + impossible for God to have wife and good reasons to create \$ 16.17. many particles of Matter exactly alike in different Parts of the Universe? In which case, the parts of Space being alike, 'tis evident

286 Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

peut y avoir deux parties égales de Matiere, dont la Situation peut être également bien transposée; on n' en sçauroit alleguer d', autre Raison, que cette * Petition de Principe. \$ 20. sçavair, qu'en ce cas la, ce que le sequent Auteur dit d' une Railon Suffiante, ne feroit pas bien fondé. Car Jans cela, comment, † \$ 16,17, peut-on dire qu' il est † impossible que Dieu puisse augir de bonnes. Raisons pour créen plusieurs garticules de Matiere parfaitement semblables an different liaux de l'Universi? Et en ce cas là, puifque les parties de l'. Espace sont semblables, il as évident que sa co Dieu n'a point donné à ces parties de Matiere des Situations differentes des lo commencement, il n' a pa en avoir d' autre Rai, son que sa seule Volonte, Cependant en ne peut pas dire avec raison qu' una tella 1 \$ 16, & Volonté est | une Volonté sans aucun matif , Car les bonnes Raisons que Dieu peut 69. ovoir de créer plusieurs particules de Mar tiere parfaitement semblables, doinent par conséquent lui servir de Motif pour choisir (ce qu' une Balance ne scauroit faire) l' una de deux choses absoluments indifferentes ; c'est à dire, pour mettre cassparticules dans une Certaine Situation, quoi qu' une Situation tout à fait contraire ent, été également bonne.

La Necessité, dans les Questions Rhiloso-194 3, phiques, signifie tossours une Necessité ab-10,11,12, solue. La * Necessité A Hypothetique.

13.

[†] Voiez mes Discours sur l'éxistence de Dicu, le vérité de la Religion naturelle, large, Part le Page 106. quarrieme Edic.

evident there can be no reason, but more Will, for not having originally transposed their Situations. And yet seven Tols care not be reasonably said to be a * Will without * 5 16 and Motive; forafmuch as the wife reasons God 69. may possibly have to create many particles of Matter exally slike, must confiquently be a Motive to him to take (what a Balance could not do,) one out of two displacely Indifferents; that is, to place them in one biguation, when the transpeling a okothern would not but have been ranacily rallie une propose qui air e la vegità, ce e choos timae de Paince producte un vollence C off co que P on Joseph and two Take Millio Level i Combington Philophique touchers in the is Jeworn, fila Garage Vil. Ele. K physique do l' Att in a final celus que nous up: " a l' est maline autre I'm versi la caula de l' » Jou, cu e P Lyent, & on fellow you if no v veritable Agent, a or an firste r On peut remarquer Li en politici, e e lo Squant Auteur come of the the the the the come fuits stadisours exalineent Plant a

Necessity, in Philosophical Queltions, at + \$ 4, 5. ways fignifies ab foliate Necessary + Hype 6, 7, 8, 9, sherical Naceffity and Moral Noteffity, tate 13. le dem er jugement de l'inindende pra-

^{*} See my Sermons at Mr. Boyle's Leaure, Part I. Pag. *406. Edit. 4. only

la Necessité Morale, ne sont que des mani-eres de parler Figurées; & à la rigueur Philosophique, elles ne sont point une Necessité. Il né s'agit pas de sçavoir si une shose doit être, lors que l'on suppose qu' elle est, ou qu'elle sera : C'est ce qu'on appelle une Necessité Hypothetique. Il ne agit pas non plus de sçavoir, s' il est vrai ne scauroit faire le mal ; ou si un Etre sage, qui continue d'être sage, ne sçauroit agin d'une maniere contraire à la sagesse; ou si une personne qui aime la vérité, & qui continue de l'aimer, peut dire un mensonge : C'est ce que l'on appelle une Necessité Morale. Mais la véritable & la seule Question Philosophique touchant la Liberté, consiste à sçavoir, si la Cause ou le Principe immédiat & physique de l' Action est réellement dans celui que nous appellons l'Agent; ou si c' est quelque autre Raison suffisante, qui est la véritable cause de l'Action, en agissant sur l' Agent, & en faisant qu' il ne soit pas un véritable Agent, mais un simple Patient.

On peut remarquer ici en passant, que le sçavant Auteur contredit sa propre Hypothese, lors qu' il dit que * la Volonté ne suit pas tousjours exactement l'Entendement pratique, parce qu' elle peut quelquesois trouver des raisons pour suspendre sa resolution. Car ces raisons-là ne sont-elles pas le dernier jugement de l'Entendement pra-

tique ?

21,---25,

only Figurative Ways of Speaking, and in Philosophical strictness of Truth, are no Necessity at all. The Question is not, whether a Thing must be, when it is supposed that it is, or that it is to be; (which is Hypothetical Necessity:) Neither is it the Question whether it be True that a good Being, continuing to be Good, cannot do Evil; or a wife Being, continuing to be Wise, cannot act unwisely; or a veracious Person, continuing to be veracious, cannot tell a Lie; (which is moral Necessity:) But the true and only Question in Philosophy concerning Liberty, is, whether the immediate Physical Cause or Principle of Action be indeed in Him whom we call the Agent; or whether it be some other Reason sufficient, which is the real Cause of the Action, by operating upon the Agent, and making him to be, not indeed an Agent, but a mere Patient.

It may here be observed, by the way; that this learned Author contradicts his own Hypothesis, when he says, that † the † 5 11. Will does not always precisely follow the practical Understanding, because it may sometimes find Reasons to suspend its Resolution. For are not those very Reasons, the last Judgment of the practical Understanding?

Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

21,--25. S' il est possible que Dieu produise ou qu'il ait produit deux portions de Matiere parfaitement semblables, de sorte que le changement de leur Situation seroit une chose indifferente; ce que le sçavant Auteur dit d' une Raison suffisante, ne prouve rien. En répondant à ceci, il ne dit pas (comme il le devroit dire,) qu' il est † impossible que Dieu fasse deux portions de Matiere tout-àfait semblables; mais que sa sagesse ne lui permet pas de le faire. Comment sçait-il cela? Pourra-t-il prouver qu' il n' est pas possible que Dieu puisse avoir de bonnes raisons pour créer plusieurs parties de Matiere parfaitement semblables en differents lieux de l' Univers ? La seule preuve qu'il allegue, est, qu'il n'y auroit aucune Raison Suffisante, qui put déterminer la Volonté de Dieu d mettre une de ces Parties de Matiere dans une certaine Situation plâtôt que dans une autre. Mais si Dieu peut avoir plusieurs bonnes raisons, (on ne sçauroit prouver le contraire,) si Dieu, dis-je, peut avoir plusieurs bonnes raisons pour créer plusieurs parties de Matiere tout-a-fait semblables; l'indifference de leur Situation suffira-t-elle pour en rendre la Création impossible, ou contraire à sa Sagesse ? Il me semble que c'est * formellement supposer ce

* **§** 20.

[†] Voiez le Quatrieme Egrit de Mr. Leibnitz, § 2, 3,6,

21-25. If it is possible for God to make or to bave made two Pieces of Matter exactly alike, so that the transposing them in Situation would be perfectly indifferent; this learned Author's Notion of a fufficient Redfan, falls to the Ground. To this he answers; not, (as his Argument requires,) that 'tis * impossible for God to make * See Mr. two Pieces exactly alike; but, that 'tis Leibnizz's not Wife for him to do fo. But how does Paper, 52, he know, it would not be Wife for God to 3, 6, 13, do so? Can he prove that it is not possible 6 13. God may have Wife Reasons for creating Many Parts of Matter exactly alike in different Parts of the Universe? The only Argument he alledges, is," that then there would not be a sufficient Reason to determine the Will of God, which Piece should be placed in which Situation. But if, for ought that any otherwise appears to the contrary, God may possibly have many wife Reasons for creating many Pieces exactly alike; will the Indifference alone of the Situation of fuch Pieces, make it impossible that he should create, or impossible that it should be Wise in him to create them? I humbly conceive, this is an + express Beg-+5 20. ging of the Question. To the like Argument drawn by me from the absolute Indifferency of the original particular Determination of Motion, no Answer has been returned.

293 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

qui est en Question. On m'a point répondu d un nutre Argument de la même Nature, que j' ai soudé sur l' Indisserence absolue de la premiere Determination particuliere du Mouvement au commencement du Monde.

26,—32. Il semble qu'il y ait ici pluseurs contradictions. On reconnoit * que deux choses tout-à-fait semblables, seroient véritablement deux choses; & nonobstant cet aveu, on continue de dira qu'elles n'auraient pas le principe d'Individuation: é dans le IV Ecrit, § 6, on assure positivement, qu'elles ne seroient qu'une même chose sous deux noms. Quoi que l'on

† \$ 26. reconnoisse † que ma supposition est possible, on ne veut par me permettre de faire cette

1 5 27. supposition. On avoue || que les parties du Temps & de l'Espace sont parfaitement semblables en elles-mêmes; mais on nie cette ressemblance lors qu'il y a des Corps dans

*5 28. Cas parties. On compare * les differentes parties de l'Espace qui coëxistent, & les differentes parties successives du Temps, à une Ligne droite, qui coupe une autre Ligne droite en deux Points coincidents, qui ne

1 5 29. Sont qu' un seul Point. On soutient que †
l'Espace n' est que l' Ordre des choses qui
s 30. coëxistent; & cependant on avous || que

le Monde materiel peut être borné: d'où il s'ensuit qu'il faut nécessairement qu'il y ait un Espace vuide au delà du Monde. On

6 8, 6 reconnoit * que Dieu pouvoit donner des 73. bornes d l' Univers; & aprez avoir fait

seem to be contained want Contradictions. It is allowed: || that Two Things exactly || 5 26. alike, would really be Two; and yet it is faill alledged; that they would want the Principle of Individuation: And in Paper 4th, \$ 6, it was exprefly affirmed, that they would be only the fame Thing under two Names. A * Suppolition, is allowed tod * 5 26. be pessible, and yet I maist now be allowed to make the Supposition. The + Parts of + \$ 27. Time and Spaces are allowed to be exactly dike in Themselves, but not so when Bedies axist in thank. Different covaristent Parts of Space, and different successive Parts of Time, are * compared to a first Line cuta * 5,28, ting another firsit Line in two coincident Roints, which are but one Point only. The effirmed, that h Space is nothing but the † \$ 29. Order of Things co-existing 3 and yet it is || confessed that the material Universe may || \$ 30. possibly be Finite; in which Case there must necessarily be an empty extra-mundane Space. 'Tis * allowed, that God could *530,&8, make the material Universe Finite: And yet & 73. the supposing it to be possibly Finite, is stiled not only a Supposition unreasonable and word of Design, but also an timpracticable + 500 291 Fiction ;

296 Cinquieme Replique de Mr. Clarke.

l'effet de la Volonté de Diett; & cepenl'Ibid. dant on || approuve la doctrine de Des Cartes, comme si elle étoit incontestable; quoique tout le monde sçache que le seul fondement sur lequel ce Philosophe l'a établie,
est cette Supposition, Que la Massère étoit
nécessairement infinie puis que l'on ne sçauroit la supposer sinie sans contradiction.
* Epist. Voici ses propres termes. Puto * implicate

* Epist. 69, Partis primæ.

Voici ses propres termes, Puto * implicate contradictionem, ut Mundus sit sinitus. Si cela est vrai, Dieu n'a jamais pu simiter la Quantité de la Matiere; & par conséquent il n' en est point le Créateur, & il ne peut la détruite.

Il me semble que le sçavant Auteur n'
est jamais d'actord avec lui même, dans
tout ce qu'il dit touchant la Matiere Sol'Espace. Cur tantot il combat le Vuide,
ou l'Espace destitué de Matiere, comme s'il
\$29,33, étoit * absolument impossible, (l'Espace

34, 35, & la Matiere étant † inseparables :) & ve-62, 63. † 5 62. pendant il reconnoit souvent, que la Quantité de la Matiere dans l'Univers dépend de la

\$ 30, 32, || Volonté de Dieu.

733,—35. Pour prouver qu'il y a du Vuide, j'ai dit que certains Espaces ne font point de resistance. Le sçavant Auteur répond que ces Espaces sont rémplis d'une Matiere, qui n'a point † de Pesanteur. Mais l'Argument n'étoit pas fondé sur la Pesanteur: Il étoit fondé sar la Resistance, qui doit être proportionnée à la || Quantité

de

la Sans cela, pourquoi seroit-il plus difficile de meure la Terre en mouvement (même du coté où tend sa pe-santeur,) que de saire mouvoir un très-petit Globe?

that Matter was infinite necessarily in the Nature of Things, it being a Contradiction to suppose it Finite: His Words are, † Puto † Epist-69, implicare contradictionem, ut Mundies sit ma. finitus. Which if it be true, it never was in the Power of God to determine the Quantity of Matter; and confequently he neither was the Creator of it, nor can defroy it.

of the morning his a

And indeed there feeths to run a contimual Inconsistency through the Whole of what this Learned Author writes concarning Matter and Space. For fometimes he argues against a Vacuum (or Space void of Matter,) as if it was absolutely im- \$29,33. possible in the Nature of Things; space 63. and Matter being inseparable : And yet frequently he allows the Quantity of Matter in the Universe, to depend upon the + Will of God. **† 5** 30,32, 33, -35. To the Argument drawn against 673. a Plenum of Matter, from the Want of Refistence in certain Spaces; this Learned Author answers, that those Spaces are filled with a Matter which has no " Gravity, * 5 35. But the Argument was not drawn from Gravity, but from Resistence; which must be proportionable to the * Quantity of * Otherwise, What makes the Body of the Earth more difficult to be moved, (even the same way that it's Gravity Willia) than the smallest Ball?

Cinquiene Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

de la Matiere, soit que la Matiere oit de la pesanteur, ou qu'elle n'en-ait pas.

Pour prévenir cette Réplique, l'Autener dit que * la Resistance ne vient pastant de la Quantité de la Matiere, que de la difficulté qui elle an céder Mais cets Argument est tout à fait bors d'ocuvre : parce que les corps fluides qui ont peu de tenacité, que qui n' en ont point du tout, comme l'Eau & le Vif Argent, dont les parties n' ont de la peine à céder, qu' à propotion de la Quantité de Matiere qu' elles contiennent. L' Exemple † Ibid. que l'antire qui tois flotant, qui contient moins de matiere pelante qu' un égal Volume d'Eaury & qui ne faisse pas de faire une plus grande reliftance in cet Exemple,

es ce ? dis-je, n'est rien moins que Philosophique, Car un égal Nolume d'est renfermée dans et en Kaifeau, au gélée & flotante, fait une

plus grande resistance que la bois flotant; parce qu' alors la resistance est cousee par le Volume entier de l'eau. Mais lors que l'eau

se tranve en liberté & dans son état de fluidité, la refistance n'est pas oausée par toute la maile du Kolume egal d'eau, mais seulement par une partie de cate masse, de sarte qu'il n'est pas supprenant, que dens ce cas cau semble faire moins de resistance que

le boist the free of the secretary 48. L'Auteur ne paroit pes raisonner serieusement dans cette partie de son Ecrit. Il se contente de donner un faux

1914

3€ € 1

Matter, whether the Matter had any Gra-ये को हैर्या साथ कि शिक्ष भारत vity, or mo.

To obvince this Reply, he alleges that * Refisence does not wile so much from the *5 341 Quantity of Matter, as from its Difficulty of giving Place. But this Allegation is wholly wide of the Porpole; because the Question related only to such Fluid Bodies. which have little or no Tenacity, as Water and Quickfilder, whose Parts have no other Difficulty of giving Place, but what arises from the Quantity of the Matter they comthink The inflance of a + fleating Piece of + Ibid. Wood, containing left of beaut Matter than an 'equal Bulk of Water, and 'yet) making greater Resistances, is wonderfully unphilofophical: For an equal Balk of Water that up in a Vessely or frozen into Ice, and floating, makes a greater Refistence than the floating Wood; the Relistence Then arising from the whole Bulk of the Water: But when the Water is loofe and at liberry in its State of Fluidity, the Relistence Then is made not by the whole, but by part only, of the equal Bulk of Water; and then it is no wonder that it feems to make less Resstence than the Wood, any entire and so der Homier with the training on the same

 $\hat{j}(z) = \hat{j}(z)$ 36, ____48. These Paragraphs do not seem to contain serious Arguments, but only represent in an ill Light the Notion of

But dr. Carting

300	Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.
3 .	jour à l'iste de l'Immatité de Dieu, qui
	Just a. s. ragge ag. Intelligentic Grandway days
	n' est pas une Intelligentia supramundana
	(semota à nostris rebus sejunctaque longè,)
A lis Xvii 27, 28.	
-/,	car en lui nous avons la vie; le mouvement,
	& l'êtres de alla est de la
	L' Espace occupé par un Cerps n' est pas
\$ 36,37	.* l'Etendue da ce Corpo ; muis la Corps
	étendu existe dans cet Espade:
§ 38.	! Il. n'y a aucun Espace he borné; mais
	notre bungination considere dans l'Espece,
	qui, n' a prient de bannes, " En quit n' en peut
.* . * ·	eveir, telle partie ou telle quantité que elle
	guga à propos d'y confiderers de la confidere
5 39.	L' Espace n'est pas une Affaction d'un
	et de plusieurs corps, ou d'aucun Erre
	hotné: & il ile palle point d'un Sujet à
	un autre ; mais il est todjours. El sans varia-
	tion, l'Immensité d' un Etre Immense, qui
	ne cesse jamais d'être lomême.
§ 40:	Les Espaces bornez ne sont point des *
3 400	proprietez des Substances bornées: Ils ne
	font que des parties de l'Espace infini, dans
	lesquelles les Substances bornées existent.
	Si la Matiere étoit infiniei. L'Espace in-
5 41.	find ne sonit pas plus une d'Proprieté de
	ce Corps infini, que les Bipaces finis sont
	des Proprietez des Corps finis : Mais en ce
	cas, la Matiere infinie seroit dans l' Espace
	infini, comme les Corps sinis y sont presente-
	ment.
	MINTING

the Immensity or Omnipresence of God; who is not a mere Intelligentia supramundana, [Semota à nostris rebus sejunctaq; longè;] is not far from every one of us; for in bim we (and all Things) live and move 27, 28, and have our Being.

The Space occupied by a Body, is not the † Extension of the Body; but the ex- +5 36,37.

tended Body exists in that Space.

* bounded Space; but only we in our Ima- \$38.

* bounded Space; but only we in our Ima- \$38.

gination fix our Attention upon what Part

or Quantity we please, of that which it self
is always and necessarily unbounded.

Space is not an † Affection of one Body, † 5 39. or of another Body, or of any finite Being; nor passes from Subject to Subject; but in always invariably the Immensity of one only and always the same Immension.

Finite Spaces are not at all the | Affecti- | \$ 40. ons of Finite Substances; but they are only those Parts of Infinite Space, in which Finite Substances exist.

If Matter was infinite, yet infinite Space would no more be an * Affection of that * infinite Body, than finite Spaces are the Affections of finite Bodies; but, in that Case, the infinite Matter would be, as sinite Bodies now are, in the infinite Space.

Immensity

Cinquième Replique de Mr. Clarke.

L' Immensité n'est pas moins | efsentielle § 42. d Dieu, que son Eternité. Les * Parties de * Voïcz l' Immensité étant tout-a-fait differentes ci-deffus dans ma des Parties materielles, separables, divisibles, 3 Rephque, § 3, & mobiles, d'où nait la corruptibilité; el-& quatri-les n' empêchent pas l'Immensité d' être éme Reessentiellement simple, comme les Parties de plique, S la Durée n' empêchent pas que la même Siruplicité ne soit essentielle à l'Eternité.

Dieu lui-même n'est sujet à aucun † Changement, par la diversité & les changemens des Choses, qui ont la vie, le mouvement, &.

l'être en lui.

Cette | Doctrine, qui paroit si étrange d V Auteur, est la Doctrine formelle de St. Aft. xvii. Paul, & la ovix de la Nature & de la 27, 28.

Dieu n' existe point * dans l' Espace, ni dans le Temps; mais son existence + est la † Voïez Cause de l'Espace & du Temps. Et lors ci-deffus fur ma IV que nous disons, conformement au Language du Vulgaire, que Dieu exisse dans tout ? Réplique, Espace & dans tout le Temps; nous vou-**€** 10. lons dire seulement qu'il est par tout & qu' il est éternél, c'est-a-dire, que l'Espace infini & le Temps sont des Suites nécessaires de fon Existence : & non, que l' Espace & le Temps sont des Etres distincts de lui;

DANS lesquels il existe. Fak fait voir-ci-dessus, sur § 40, * que ***** § 46. Espace borné n' est pas l' Etendue des Corps_

> † Voici, ce me semble, la principale raison de la confusion & des contradifions, que l'on trouve dans ce que la

Immensity, as well as Eternity, is \(\text{effen-} \tau \) \(\text{tial to God.} \) The \(\text{Parts of Immensity,} \(\text{see above,} \) \(\text{(being totally of a different kind from in my Third corporeal, partable, separable, divisible, moveable Parts, which are the ground of Cor-Reph, six-riptibility; \(\text{)} \) do no more hinder Immensity from being essentially One, than the Parts of Duration hinder Eternity from being essentially One.

God himself suffers no * Change at all, * s by the Variety and Changeableness of Things which live and move and have their Being in him.

This † firange Doctrine, is the express † § 44. Affertion of * St. Paul, as well as the plain *AB; xvii. Voice of Nature and Reason.

God does not exist | In Space, and In | § 45.

Time; but His Existence * causes Space *See above, and Time. And when, according to the my Fourth Analogy of vulgar Speech, we say that he reply, § 10. exists in All Space and in All Time; the Words mean only that he is Omnipresent and Eternal; that is, that Boundless Space and Time are necessary Consequences of his Existence; and not, that Space and Time are Beings distinct from him, and IN which he exists.

† How || Finite Space is not the exten- † \$ 46.

Note: The principal Occasion or Reason of the Confusion and Inconsistencies, which appear in what most Writers have advanced

304 Cinquiene Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

Corps. Et l' on n' a aussi qu' à comparer les deux Sostiens suivantes (47 6:48) auec de que j'ai déja † dit,

† Voicz auffi cideffons far la \$53, & fur la

S 54.

49,---51. Il me semble que ce que l'on trouve ici, n'est qu' une chicane sur des mots.

Pour

plûpart des Philosophes ont avancé sur la nature de l' Aspace. Les hommes sont naturellement portex, faute d'attencion, à négliger une distinction très-nécessaire, & sans laquelle on ne peut raisonner clairement: Je veux dire qu'ils n'ont pas soin de distinguer, quoi qu'ils le dissent todiques faire, entre les Termes Abstraits & Concrets, comme sont l'Immensité & l'Immense. Ils négligent aussi de faire une distinction entre les Idées & les Choses; comme sont l'Idée de l'Immensité, que nous avons dans notre Esprit; & l'Immensité réelle, qui existe absuellement bors de mus.

Je crois que toutes les Notions qu'on a eu touchant la Nature de l'Espace, ou que l'on s'en peut former, se reduisent à celles-ci. L'Espace est un pur néant, ou il n'est qu'une simple Adée, ou une simple. Rélation d'une chose à une autre, ou bien il est la Matiere, ou quelque autre Substance,

Ou la Proprieté d'une Substance.

Il est évident que l'Espace n'est pas un pur néant. Car le néant n'a ni Quantite, ni Dimensions, ni aucune Proprieté. Ce Principe est le prémier Fondement de touse soire de Science; & il fait voir la seule différence qu'il y a entre ce qui existe, & ce qui n'existe pas.

Il est aussi évident que l'Espace n'est pas une pure Idée. Car il n'est pas possible de tormes une Idée de l'Espace, qui aille au delà du Fini; & cependant la Raison nous enseigne que c'est une contradiction que l'Espace lui-même

ne loit pas actuellement byfini.

Il n'est pas moins certain que l'Espace n'est pas une simple Rélation d'une chose à une autre, qui resulte de leur Situation, ou de l'Ordre qu'elles ont entre elles: Puisque l'Espace est une Quantisé; ce qu'on ne peut pas dire des Rélations, telles que la Situation & l'Ordre. C'est ce que je sais voir amplement ci-dessous, sur \$ 54. J'ajoure que si le Monde materiel est, ou peut être, borné; il saux sécrésairement qu'il y ait un Espace actuel ou sossible au delà de l'Univers. Voiez sur \$ 31, 52, & 73.

H

fion of Bodies, I have shown just above, on § 40. And the two following Paragraphs also, (\$ 47 & 48,) need only to be compared with what hath been already * said.

49, _____51. These seem to me, to be on- \$ 53,80 an ly a quibbling upon Words. Concerning \$54.

advanced concerning the Nature of Space, seems to be This: that (unless they attend carefully,) men are very apt to negled That Necessary Distinction, (without which there can be no clear Reasoning,) which ought always to be made between Abstracts and Concretes, such as are Immensions & Immensions, Gralso between Ideas and Things, such as are The Notion (which is Within our own Mind) of Immensity, and the real Immensity actually existing Without us.

All the Conceptions (I think) that ever have been or can be framed concerning Space, are these which follow. That it is either absolutely Nothing, or a mere Idea, or only a Relation of one thing to another, or that it is Body, or some other Substance, or else a Property of a Substance.

That it is not absolutely Nothing, is most evident. For of Nothing there is No Quantity, No Dimensions, No Properties. This Principle is the First Foundation of All Science what seever; expressing the Only Difference between what does,

and what does not, exist.

That it is not a mere Idea, is likewise most manifest. For no Idea of Space; can possibly be framed larger than Finite; and yet Reason demonstrates that 'tis a Contradiction for Space

itself not to be actually Infinite.

That it is not a bare Relation of one thing to another, arising from their Situation or Order among themselves, is no less apparent: Because Space is a Quantity, which Relations (such as Signation and Order) are not; As I have largely shown below, on \$ 54. Also because, if the material Universe is, or can possibly be, Finite; there cannot but be, actual or possible, Extramundane Space: See on § 31, 52, and 72:

That Space is not Body, is also most clear. For then Body would be necessarily infinite; and No Space could be void.

306 Cinquitme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

Pour se qui ast de la question touchant les paries de l'Espace, voien ci-dessus, Réplique IV, § 11.

.52, & 52. L' Argument dont je me fuis farvi ici pour faire voir que l'Espace est réellement indépendant des Corps, est fondé sits ce qu' il est possible que le Monde materiel soit borné & mobile. Le sçavant Auteur ne devoit donc pas se contenter de répliquez, qu' il ne croit pas que la Sagesse de Dieu lui ait pû permettre de donner des bornes à l'Univers, & de le rendre capable de mouvement. Il faut que l'Auteur soutienne qu'il étoit impossible que Dieu fit un Monde borné & mobile; ou, qu'il reconnoisse la force de mon Argument fondé sur ce qu' il est possible que le Monde soit borné & mobile. L' Auteur ne devoit pas non plus se contenter de repeter ce qu'il avoit avancé, sçavoir, que le mouvement

Il est aussi trés-évident, que l'Espace, n'est pas la Matiere. Car, en ce cas, la Matiere seroit nécéssairement insoire, & il n' y auroit aucun Espace, qui ne resissat au mouvement. Ce qui est contraire à l'Experience.

Il n'est pas moins certain que l'Espace n'est Ancune sorte de substance; puisque l'Espace infini est l'Immensisé, & non pas l'Immensie : au lieu qu' une Substance infinie est l'Ammensie, comme la Darée n'est pas une Substance; parce qu' une Durée infinie est l'Eternisé, & non un Esre Eternel: mais une substance infinie est un Erre Eternel, & non pas l'Eternisé.

il s'ensuit donc nécessairement de ce que l' on vient de dire, que l'Espace est une Proprieté, de la même maniete que la Dutée. L'immensité est une Proprieté de l' Etre Immense, comme l'Eternité est une Proprieté de l'

Etre Eternel.

the Question about Space having Parts, see above; Reply 3, § 3; and Reply 4, § 11.

52, and 53. My Argument bere, for the Notion of Space being really independent upon Body, is founded on the Possibility of the material Universe being finite and moveable: Tis not enough therefore for this Learned Writer to reply, that he thinks it would not have been wife and reasonable for God to have made the material Universe finite and moveable. He must either affirm, that 'twas impossible for God to make the material World finite and moveable; or else he must of necessity allow the Strength of my Argument, drawn from the Possibihity of the World's being finite and mover able. Neither is it sufficient barely to repeat his Affertion, that the Motion of a finite material Universe would be nothing,

void of Refistence to Motion. Which is contrary to Ex-

That Space is not Any kind of Substance, is no less plain, Because infinite Space is Immension, not Immension, whereas infinite Substance is Immension, not Immensions. Just as Duration is not a Substance: because infinite Duration is peternized, not generally, but infinite Substance is generally, not generally.

It remains therefore, by Necessary Consequence, that Space is a Property, in like manner as Duration is. Immensicas, is To Immensicas, is To Attenti.

308 Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

d' un Monde borné ne seroit rien, & que, fante d' Autres Corps avec lesquels on put le comparer, il ne * produiroit aucun changement sensible. Je dis que l'Auteur ne devoit pas se contenter de repeter cela, à moins qu'il ne fût en état de téfuter ce que j' avois dit d'un fort grand changement qui arriveroit dans le cas proposé; sçavoir, que les Parties recevroient un choc sensible par une soudaine Augmentation du mouvement du Tout, ou par la Cessation de ce même mouvement. On n'a pas entrepris de répondre à cela.

53. Commme le sçavant Auteur est obligé de reconnoitre ici, qu'il y a de la difference entre le mouvement absolu & le mouve ment rélatif; il me semble qu'il s' ensuit de là nécessairement, que l'Espace ést une chose tout-d-fait difference de la Situation con de d' Ordre des Corps. C'est de quoi les Lecteurs pourront juger, en comparant ce que l'Au-teur dit ici avec ce que l'on trouve dans les Principes de Mr. le Chevalier Newton

lib. 1. defin. 8.

54. J' avois dit que le Temps & l'Espace étoient des QUANTITEZ; ce qui en ne peut pas dire de la Situation & de l' On réplique à cela, que l'Ordre a sa Quantité; qu'il y a dans l'Ordre quelque chose qui précéde, & quelque chose qui suit; qu' il y a une Distance ou un tatervalle. Je réponds, que ce qui précéde ce qui suit, conflitue la Situation au l'

Ordre ;

and (for want of other Bodies to compare it with) would † produce no discoverable † \$ 52. Change: Unless he could disprove the Instance which I gave of a very great Change that would happen; viz. that the Parts would be sansibly shocked by a sudden Acceleration, on stopping of the Motion of the Whole: To which Instance, he has not attempted to give any Answer.

forced here to acknowledge the difference between absolute real Motion and relative, Motion, does not necessarily infer that Space is really a quite different Thing from the Situation or Order of Bodies; I leave to the Judgment of those who shall be pleased to compare what this learned Writer here alleges, with what Sir Isaac Newton has said in his Principia, Lib. 1, Defin. 8.

were QUANTITIES, which Situation and Order were not. To this, it is replied; that Order has its Quantity; there is that which goes before, and that which follows; there is Distance or Interval. I answer: Going before, and following, constitutes Situation or Order: But the Distance, Interval, or Quantity of Time or X 3

310 Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

8 54.

Ordre; mais la Distance, l'Intervalle, 'su la Quantité du Temps ou de l'Espace, dans lequel une chôse suit une dutre, oft une chose tout-a-fait distincte de la Situation ou de l'Ordre, & elle ne constitue aucune Quantité de Situation ou d'Ordre. La Situation ou l'Ordre peuvent être les mêmes, lors que la Quantité du Temps ou de P Espace, qui intervient, se trouve fort differente. Le sçavant Auteur ajoute, que les Raisons & les Proportions | ont leur Quantité; & que, par conséquent, le Temps & l' Espa-ce peuvent aussi avoir leur Quantité, quoi qu'ils ne soient que des Rélations. Je réponds, Prémièrement, que s'il étoit vrai que quelques fortes de Relations, (comme, par exemple, les Raisons ou les Proportions, fussent des Quantitez; il ne s'enfuivrott pourtant pas que la Situation & l' Ordre, qui sont des Rélations d'une Nature tout a-fait differente, servient aussi des Quantitezi Secondement; les Proportions ne sont pas des Quantitez, mais les Proportions de Quantitez. Si elles étoient des Quantitez, elles seroient les Quantitez de Quantitez; ce qui est absurde. J'ajoute que si elles étoient des Quantitez, elles augmenterolent vokjours pur l'Addition, comme toutes les autres Quant titez. Mais l' Addition de la Proportion de I à I, à la Proportion de I à I; na fait pas plus que la Proportion de I à I. Et l'Addition de la Proportion de L'A à la Proportion de 1 à 1, ne fait pas la Propor-

Space, wherein one Thing follows another, is entirely a distinct Thing from the Situal tion or Order, and does not constitute any Quantity of Situation or Order: The Situation or Order may be the fame, when the Quantity of Time or Space interventing is very different. This Learned Author further replies, that Ratio's or Propositions + have their Quantity; and therefore fot \$ 54. may Time and Space, though they beinds thing but Relations. I answer if 3 If it had been true, that some purticular Sorrs of Relations, such as Ratio's or Proportions, were Quantities; yet it would not have followed, that Situation and Order, which are Relations of a quite different Kind, would have been Quantities too. But 2dly: Proportions are not Quantities, but the Propostions of Quantities. If they were Quantities, they would be the Quantities of Quantities: which is abfurd. Also, if they were Quantities, they would (like all other Quantities) increase always by Addition: But the Addition of the Proportion of reto 1, to the Proportion of 1 to 1, makes still no more than the Proportion of I to I; and the Addition of the Proportion of balf to 1, to the Proportion of 1 to 1, does not make the Proportion of 1 and a bulf to 1. but the Proportion only of baf to r. That which Mathematicians fometimes inaccurately call the Quantity of Proportion, is (accurately and strictly speaking,) only X 4

Proportion de 1; à 1, mais feulement de Proportion de : à 1. Ce que les Mathematiciens appellent quelquefois avec peu de exactitude la Quantité de la Proportion, int est, à parler proprement, que la Quartité de la Grandeur Rélative ou Comparative d' une chose par rapport à une autre :Et la Proportion n'est pas la Grandeur comparative même, mais la Comparaison ou le Rapport d'une Grandeur à une autre. La Proposit tion de 6 à I, par rapport à celle de 3 d. I. n' est pas une double Quantité de Proport tion, mais la Proportion d' une double Quantité. Et en général, se que l'on dis Avoir une plus grande ou plus petite Pro-portion, s'est pas, avoir une plus grande ou plus petite Quantité de proportion ou de rapport, mais, avoir la proportion ou le rapport d' une plus grande ou plus pei tite Quantité à une autre : Ce n'est pas una plus grande ou plus petite Quantité de Comparaison, mais la Comparaison d'une plus grande ou plus petite Quantité L'A Expression * Logarithmique d' ane Proport tion, n' est pas (comme le sçavant Auteur le dit) la Mesure, mais seulement l'Indice ou le Signe artificiel de la Proportion: Cet Indice ne designe pas une Quantité de la praportion; il marque seulement combien; de fois une Proportion est répetée ou compliquées Le Logarithme de la Proportion d'Eggine, est. 0; ce qui n' empéche pas que cana soit une Proportion aussi reelle qu' aucune aus tre :

7 5 54

the Quantity of the Relative or Comparative Magnitude of one Thing with regard to another: And Proportion is not the comparative Magnitude it felf, but the Comparison or Relation of the Magnitude to Another The Proportion of 6 to r, with regard to that of 3 to 1, is not a double Quantity of Proportion, but the Proportion of a detable Quantity. And in general, what they call Bearing a greater or less Proportion, is not bearing a greater on less Quantity of Brown postion or Relation, but, bearing the Rroparties, or Relation of a greater or less Quant tity to Another: Tis not a greaten of less Quantity of Comparison, but the Comparison of a greater or less Quantity. The || Linga || 6 54 richmick Expression of a Proportion, is not (as this learned Author stiles it) a Measure, but only an artificial Index or Sign of Proportion: 'Tis not the expressing a Quantity of Proportion, but barely a denoting the Number of Times that any Proportion is repeated or complicated. The Logarithm of the Proportion of Equality, is on, and yet 'tis as real and as much a Proportion, as any others. And when the Logarithm is negative, as i; yet the Proportion, of which it is the Sign or Index, is it self affirmation. Duplicate or Triplicate Proportion, does not denote a double or triple Quantity of Proportion, but the Number of Times that the Proportion is repeated. The tripling of any Magnitude or Quantity once, produces

314. Cinquisme Réplique de Mri Clarke.

tre in Its fors que le Logarithme estimegatif. comme T; la proportion, dont il eff. le Signe ou l'Indice, ne laisse pas d'être affirmative s La Proportion doublée ou triplife, no de signo puis mie double ou triple Quatitità le s Propertion!; elle marque feulement combiels de fois la Proportion of réparte & St II min triple une fois quelque Grandeus viu quel que Quantité, cola produit une Grandour auune Quantité, inquelle pur rapport distagres. miere a la proportion de 3 de 17 St an Min. triple une seconde. Tolo, coelas procheis (mais I pas une double Quantité de Propossion, mais) une Grandout out une Quantité, laquelle, par rapport à la premiere u la proportion (que l'en appelle doubled) de gre to on la triple une troisseine fois, cela produit; (non puls une triple Quantité de proportion) mait) hone Grandeur ou wie Quantite laquelle punirapport di la prémiere a la proportion (quer l'on appelle ruplée) de 27 din 10. Et. ainst du ceste. Troisiémement, le Temps Geit l'Hapace ne sont point du tout de la Nature des Proportions, mais de la Nasure des c Quantine absolues, aunquelles les Proportions conditionent. Par exemple, la Proportion

* C'est-à dist, comme le viens de le remarquer, elle n'est pas une plus grande Quantité de Proportion, mais la Proportion d'une plus grande Quantité comparative.

duces a Magnitude or Quantity, which to the former bears the Proportion of 3 to 11 The tripling it a ferond time, produces (not a double Quantity of Proportion, but) a Magnitude or Quantity, which to the fifth men bears the Proportion (called displicate) of 9 to 1. (The tripling it a third time, produces (not a triple Quantity of Propotzion, but) a Magnitude or Quantity, which to the former beam the Proportion (called triplicate) of 27/to 1.1 And so one 3dly Time, and Space are not of the Nature of Proportions at all, but of the Nature of absolute Quantities to which Proportions belong. As for Example of the Preportion and the of 12 to 1, 13 a much greater Proportien, (that is, as I now observed, not a greater Quantity of Proportion, but the Proportion of a greater comparative Quantity,) than that of 2 to 1 ; and yet one and the fame unvaried Quantity, may to dhe Thing bear the Proportion of 12 to 1, and to another Thing at the fame time the Proportion of war and 2 to 1. Thus the Space of a Day, bears a ... much greater Proportion to an Hour, than it does to balf a Day; and yet it remains, notwithflanding Bosh the Responsions, the fame unvaried Quantity of Time. Time therefore, I and Spuce likewise by the same Argument, is not of the Nature of a Proportion, but of an absolute and unvaried Quantity, so unbich different Proportions belong. Unless this Reasoning can be shown

port à line ébose, de entanême temps la proportion de 2 de par rappert à une autre. C'est ainsi, que l'Espace d' un Jour a rene beaucoup plus grande proportion à une Heure, qu' à la moitie d'un Jour; & cewendant, abubbsant ces deux Proportions, al continue d'istre la même Quantité de Temps fants aweupe variation. Il est donc certain, que le Demps [& l' Espace aussi par la même ruison n'est pas de la Nature des Proportions, mais de la Nature des Quantitez absolues de invariables, qui ont des Proportions différentes. Le Sentiment du rçavant Auteur sera donc encore, de son † IVEcrit, * propro dueu, ane Contradiction; à moins qu'il ne fusse voir la fausseté de ce Raison-55, 63. Il me semble que tout ce que ton trouve ict, est une Contradiction manifeste. Les Sçavans en pourront juger. On suppose formellement dans || Un endroit, que Dieu auroit pu créer l' Univers plûtôt ou *§ 55,57, plus tard. Et *Ailleurs on dit que ces termes mêmes (plutôt & plus tard) sont des tiv Ecrit, termes inintelligibles & des † Suppositions impossibles. On trouve de semblables Contradictions dans ce que l' Auteur dit touchant l'Espace dans lequel la Matiere subfiste: Voiez ci dessus, sur § 26, - 32. 64, 6 65. Voiez ci-deffiu, \$ 54.

S 16.

66,-- 70. Voiez ei dessus, § 1,--20; O \$ 21, --- 25. F ajouterai failement ici, que l'Auteur, en || comparant la Vo-\$ 70. lonté

in the second of THE PARTY OF WAR TO ME TO SEE SHIPS .

Line Comments of the Sale Care

to be falle, our Lessned Author's Opinion still remains, by his . * own Confession, a * Fourth Contradiction. Production of Contract of Paper, \$16.

55; 63. All This, seems to me to be a plain Contradiction; and I am willing to leave it to the Judgment of the Learned. In + one Paragraph, there is a plain and di- + \$ 56. Aind Supposition, that the Universe might be created as much fooner or later as God pleased. In the || rest, the very Terms || \$ 55,57, fooner or later are treated as unintelligi- 58, -63. He Terms and * impossible Suppositions. * Fourth And the like, concerning the Space in Paper, \$15. which Matter subsits; See above, on S

that + comparing the Will of God, when it + 6 70.

chuses

64, and 65. See above upon § 54. and on \$ 21 --- 25. I shall here only add.

Cinquitate Réplique do Mr. Clarke.

lenté de Dint eu hazardi d'Epicure, lars qu' entre plusieurs manieres d'agir également bonnes elle en choisit une, compare ensemble deux choses, qui sont auffi differentes que deux choses le puissent être; puis qu' Epicure ne reconnoissoit aucune Volonté, aucune Intelligence, aucun Principe actif dans la formation de l'Univers.

71. Voiez ci-dessus, § 21-25.

72. Voiez ci-dessus, § 1-20. 73-75. Quand on confidere st l'Espa-

ce est indépendant de la Matiere, & si l' Univers peut être borné & mobile ; (voiez ci-dessus, § 1-20, & § 26-32;) il ne s' agit pas de la Sagesse ou de la * Volonté de Dieu, mais de la Nature absolue o nécessaire des choses. Si l' Univers PEUT estre borné & mobile, par la Volonté de Dieu; (se que le sepvant Auteur est obligé d'accorder ici, quoi qu'il dise continuellement que c'est une Supposition impossible;) il s'enfuit évidemment que l'Espace, dans lequel ce mouvement se fait, oft indépendant de la Matiere. Mais si, au con-HIV Ecrit, traire, l'Univers + ne Peut être borné & \$ 21; & mobile, & si l'Espace ne Peut être indé-v Ecrit, pendant de la Matiere; il s'ensuit évidenment, que Dieu ne Peut ni ne Pouvoit donner des bornes à la Matiere ; & par conféquent l'Univers deit être, non seulement sans bornes, mais encore || éternel, tant à parte ante qu' à parte post, nécessairement & indépendamment de la Volonté de Dieu.

§ 73.

\$ 74.

§ 29.

shoofer one out of many equally good mays of atting, to Epicurus's Chance, who allowed No Will, No Intelligence, No Active Principle at all in the formation of the Universe; is comparing together Two things, than which No Two things can pollibly be more different.

71. See above, on § 21, ____ 25. 72. See above, on § 1, ____ 20.

73, --- 75. In the confideration whether Space be independent upon Matter, and whether the material Universe Can be Finite and Moveable, (See above, on \$ 1,-20, and on 26, ——32;) the question is not concerning the Wisdom or * Will of God, * \$ 73. but concerning the absolute and necessary Nature of Things. If the Material Uniwerse CAN pellibly, by the Will of God, be Finite and Moveably; (which this learned Author here finds himself necessitated to grant, though he perpetually treats it as an impessible supposition; then Space, (in which That Motion is performed,) is manifestly independent upon Matter. But if, on the contrary, the material Universe & Can- + Fourth not be finite and moveable, and Space can-Paper, 521. not be independent upon Matter; then and Fifth (I say), it follows evidently, that God neither Can nor quer Could let Bounds to Matter; and confequently the material Universe must be not only boundless, but | | | 5 74 eternal also, both a parte ante and a parte

1:5:1

post,

320 Cinquitme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

Car l'Opinion de ceux qui sontiennent que *575. le Monde * pourroit avoir existé de toute Eternité, par la volonté de Dieu qui exemçoit sa Puissance éternelle; cette Opinion, dis-je, n'a aucun rapport à la Matiere dont il s'agit ici.

103.

78. On ne trouve ici aucune nouvelle Objection. J'ai fait voir amplement dans les Ecrits précédens, que la Comparaison dont Mr. le Chevalier Newton s'est servi, & que l'on attaque ici, est juste & intelli-

gible.

79;—82. Tout ce que l'on objette ici dans la Section 79, & dans la suivante, est une pure Chicane sur des Mots. L'Existence de Dieu, comme je l'ai déja dit plusieurs fois, est la Cause de l'Espace; & Toutes les Autres choses existent dans cet Espace. Il s'ensuit donc que l'Espace ass.

† 580. aussi † le Lieu des Idées; parce qu'il est le ... Lieu des Substances mêmes, qui ont des situations des sans leur Entendement.

J'avois dit, par voye de comparaison, que le Sentiment de l'Auteur étoit aussi déraisonnable, que si quelqu'un soûtenoit

que || l' Ame humaine est l' Ame des Images des choses qu'elle apperçoit. Le scavant Auteur raisonne là dessus en plaisantant, comme si j' avois assuré que ce sur mon propre sentiment.

Dieu

post; necessarily and independently on the Will of God. For, the Opinion of those who contend, that the World * might possi- * 5 75. bly be Eternal, by the Will of God exercising his Eternal Power; this has no Relation at all, to the Matter at present in Question.

76 and 77. See above, on § 73-75; and on § 1-20. And below, on §

103.

78. This Paragraph contains no new Objection. The Aptness and Intelligibleness of the Similitude made use of by Sir Isaac Newton, and here excepted against, has been abundantly explained in the fore-

going Papers.

79,—82. All that is objected in the † two former of these Paragraphs, is a mere † 5.79,80, quibbling upon Words. The Existence of God, (as has often been already observed,) causes Space; and In that Space, All other Things exist. It is therefore || the Place of Ideas likewise; because it is the Place of the Substances themselves, in whose Understanding's Ideas exist.

The Soul of Man being * the Soul of the * § 81, Images of the Things which it perceives, was alledged by me, in way of comparison, as an Instance of a ridiculous Notion: And this learned Writer pleasantly argues against it, as if I had affirmed it to be my own Opinion.

322 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Glarke.

Dieu apperçoit tout, non * par le moyen d' un Organe, mais parce qu'il est lui-même astuellement present par tout. L'Espace universel est donc le Lieu où il apperçoit les Choses. Fai fait voir amplement ci-dessus ce que l' on doit entendre par le mot de Sensorium, & ce que c'est que l' Ame du Monde. C'est trop que de demander qu' on abandonne la Consequence d' un Argument, sans faire aucune nouvelle Objection contre les Premisses.

83—88; & 89—91. J' avoue que je n' entends point ce que l' Auteur dit, † 583. lors qu'il avance, que † l' Ame est un Principe representatif; que || chaque Substance * voiez r' simple * est par sa propre nature une con-Appendice, N°. 2. Univers; qu' elle † est une Representation de l' Univers, || selon son Point de vûë; d' que toutes les Substances Simples auront toûjours une Harmonie entre elles, parte qu' elles representent toûjours le même Uni-

*§ 83,87, Pour ce qui est de * l' Harmonie pré-89, 90. établie, en vertu de laquelle on prétend que les Affections de l' Ame, & les mouvemens méchaniques du Corps, s' accordent sans

vers.

† Voiez † aucune influence mutuelle; voies sidice, N°5. dessous, sur § 110—116.

f'ai supposé que les Images des choses sont portées par les Organes des Sens dans le Sensorium, où l'Ame les apperçoit. Que sont entre les apperçoit.

God perceives every Thing, not * by * \$82.

means of any Organ, but by being himself
actually present every where. This every where therefore, or universal Space, is the Place of his Perception. The Notion of Senforium, and of the Soul of the World, has been abundantly explained before. 'Tis too much to desire to have the Conclusion given up, without bringing any further Objection against the Premises.

83,—88; and 89—91. That † the Soul is a Representative Principle; † \$83. That * every simple Substance | is by its Na- * \$ 87. ture a Concentration and living Mirror of See Appendix, the whole Universe; That * it is a repre-No. 2. fentation of the Universe, † according to its * \$91. Point of View; and that all simple Sub-pendix, stances will always have a Harmony between No. 11. themselves, because they always represent the same Universe: All This, I acknowledge. I understand not at all.

Concerning the || Harmonia prastabilita, || \$ 83.87, by which the Affections of the Soul, and 89, 90. the Mechanic Motions of the Body, are affirmed to agree, without * at all influ- * See Api encing each other; See below, on § 110 pendin, ----116.

That the Images of Things are conveyed by the Organs of Sense into the Sensory, rebere the Soul perceives them; is affirmed,

Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Chrke. foûtient que c'est une chose * inintelligible mais on n' en donne aucune preuve. Touchant cette Question, souvoir, si tune Substance immaterielle agit sur une Substance materielle, ou fi celle-ci agit sur l'autre; voiez ci-dessous, § 110-116. Dire que Dieu || apperçoit & connoit toutes choses, non par sa presence actuelle, mais parce qu'il les produit continuellement de nouveau; ce sentiment, dis-je, est une pure Fa-Elion des Scholastiques, sans aucun Fondement. Pour ce qui est de l'Objection, qui porte *§ 86,87, que Dieu seroit * l' Ame du Monde ; j'y ai répondu amplement ci-deffus, Réplique II, § 12; & Réplique IV, §. 32. Sas 92. L' Auteur suppose que tous les monve-mens de nos Corps sont nécessaires, & pro-92, duits † par une simple || impulsion mécha-95, 116. nique de la Matiere, tout à fait indépois. Appendi- dante de l' Ame: Mais je ne soaurois im cc, N° 13 empêcher de croire que cette Doctrine condute à la Nécessité & au Destin. Elle stend de faire croire que les hommes ne sont que de pures Machines, (comme des Cartes s' éton îmaginé que les Bêtes n' avoient point d' | Voiez l' Ame ;) en detruisant | tous les Argumens Appendi- fondez sur les Phénomenes, cest-dedire, sur les Actions des hommes, dont on se sert pour prouver qu'ils ont des Ames, & qu'ils ne sont pas des Etres purement materiels. Voiez ci-dessous, sur § 110—116.
93,—95. J'avois dit que chaque Action consiste à donner une nouvelle storce

aux

but not proved, to be an † unintelligible * \$ 84. Notion.

Concerning || immaterial Substance affe- 1 \$ 84. Sting, or being affected by, material Substance; See below, on § 110 — 116.

That God * perseives and knows all * 5 85. Things, not by being Present to them; but by continually producing them anew; is a mere Fiction of the Schoolmen, without any Proof.

The Objection concerning God's being the Soul of the World, has been abun- † \$ 86, dantly answered above; Reply II, § 12; 87,88,82.

and Reply IV, \$ 32.

4 92. To suppose, that all the Motions of our Bodies are necessary, and caused entirely by mere * mechanical Impulses of Matter, 11.99, 95, altogether independent on the Soul; is and 116. what (I cannot but think) tends to intropendix, duce Necessity and Fate. It tends to make No 13. Men be thought as mere Machines, as Des Carter imagined Beafts to be; by taking away i all Arguments drawn from Pha- + see Apnomena, that is, from the Actions of Men, pendix, to prove that there is any Soul, or any thing more than mere Matter in Men at all. See below, on § 110-116.

^{193-195.} I alledged, that every Action is the giving of a New Force to the Thing acted

Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

§ 99. où

cette matiere est

ample-

ment.

aux choses, qui reçoivent quelque impression. On répond à cela, que deux Corps durs & égaux, poussez l'un contre l'autre, rejaillissent avec la même force; & que per consequent leur Action reciproque ne donne point une nouvelle force. Il suffroit de répliquer qu' aucun de ces deux Corps ne réjaillit avec sa propre force; que chacun d'eux * perd sa propre force, & qu'il est repoussé avec une nouvelle force communité quée par le Ressort de l'autre: Car si nes traitéeplus deux Corps n'ont point de Ressort, ils ne réjailliront pas. Mais il est certain que toutes les Communications de mouvement purement méchaniques, ne sont pas une Action, à parler proprement : Elles ne sont qu' une simple Passion, tant dans les Corps qui poussent, que dans ceux qui sont poussez. L' Action est le commencement d'un mouvement qui n' existoit point auparavant, produit par un Principe de vie ou d'Activité: Et si Dieu ou l' Homme, ou quelque Agent vivant ou actif, agit sur quelque partie du Monde materiel ; si tout n' est pas un simple mechanisme; il faut qu' il y ait une augmentation & une Diminution continuelle

96, 97.

de toute la Quantité du mouvement qui est

vant Auteur * nie en plusieurs endroits.

dans l' Univers.

Mais c'est ce que le sça-

^{*} Tout ce que Mr. Leibnitz die sur cette matiere, paroit rempli de confusion & de contradictions: : Car: le

afted upon. To this it is objected, that two equal bard Bodies Striking each other, return with the same Force; and that therefore their Action upon each other, gives no New Force. It might be sufficient to reply, that the Bodies do Neither of them return with their own Force, but each of them * lofes *See more, its own Force, and each returns with a new Force impressed by the others Elasticity: For if they are not elastical, they return not at all. But indeed, all mere mechani-cal Communications of Motion, are not properly Action, but mere Passiveness, both in the Bodies that impell, and that are impelled. Action, is the beginning of a Motion where there was none before, from a Principle of Life or Activity: And if God or Man, or Any Living or Active Power, ever influences any thing in the material World; and every thing be not mere abfolute Mechanism; there must be a continual Increase and Decrease of the whole Quantity of Motion in the Universe. Which this -learned Gentleman * frequently denies.

96 and 97.

^{*} There appears a great Confusion and Inconsistency in Me Leibnate's whole Notion of this Matter. For the Word,

Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Mrke.

96, 97. Il se contenta ici de renvoyer à ce qu'il a dit ailleurs. Je ferai auffi la mame chose.

98. Si

mot de Force, ou de Force active, signifie, dans la question dont il s' agit ici, l' Impetus ou la Force impulsive er retative des Corps en mouvement: Voiez 612 de ma Troisionne Réplique. Mr. Leibnitz employe toûjours ce movem ce Iens: Comme lors qu'il dit, [§ 93, 94, 99, 6 10 p, de cette derniere Réponse,] Que les Corps ne changent point laur Force aprez la Réflexion, parce qu' ils retourness aves La même Vitesse: Que quand un Corps reçait une nouvelle Pince d'un autre Corps, cet autre en perd autant de la sienne: Qu'il est impossible qu' un Corps reçoive une nouvelle Force, sans que les autres en perdent autant : Que l'Univers des Corps recevreit une nouvelle Force, si l'Ame donnoit de la Force an Corps: Que les Forces Affives continuent toujours d'être les mêmes dans l'Univers, parce que la Force que les Corps fans ressort perdent dans leur Tout, est communiquée à leurs parties menues, & dissipee parmi elles. Or il paroit clairement tant par la Raison' que par l' Experience, que cer Impetus, ou cette Force active impulsive & relative des Carps en mouvement, est toujours proportionnée à la Quentite du Movement. Donc, selon les Principes de Mr. Leibpitz, puisque cette force allinie & impulsive est todiours la même en Quantité, il faut aussi nécessairement que la Quantité du Mouvement soit tossjours la même dans F Univers. Cependant il-tombe en contradiction en recommonssant ailleurs, [§ 99,] que la Quantité du Mouvement n'oft pas toujours la même : Et dans les Alla Eruditorum, ad unn 1686. pag. 161; il tâche de Prouver, que la Quantité du mouvement dans l'Univers n'est pas toujours la même; il tâche, dis-je, de le pronver par cette mêmé & seule Raison, que la Quantité de la Force impilstrue est toujours la même. Mais si cela étoit vrais il s'ensuivroit au contraire, que la Quantité du Monvement servit toujours of nécessairement la même. Ce qui a douné occasion à Mr. Leibnitz de se contredire sur recte matiere, c'est qu'il a supputé, par une méprise tout à fait indigne d'un Philosophe, la Quancies de Partice im-Erudit ad pulfive dans un Corpenqui montes pay ta Quantité de la Matiere & de l' Espace qu' il décrit en montant, sans considerer le temps que ce Corps employe à monter. Suppont, † ditil, tanta vi opus effe, &c. C'est-à-dire : " Je suppose que

96 and 97. Here this learned Author refers only to what he has faid elsewhere: And I also am willing to do the same.

98. If

Form, and Active Eorce, figuifies in the present Question, the Imperus or relative Impulsive Force of Bodies in Mosion: See my Third Reply, § 12. Mr. Leibnitz constantly uses the Word in this Sense: As when he speaks [§ 93, 94, 99, and 107, of this last Answer, of Budies not changing their Force after Reflexion, because they return with the same Swiftness: Of a Body's receiving a new Force from ano--ther Body, which lofes as much of its own: Of the impossibility, that one Body should acquire any new Force, wishout the Loss of as much in Others: Of the new Force which the whole material Universe would receive, if the Soul of Man communicated any Force to the Body: And of Active Forces continuing always the same in the Universe because the Force which un elastick Bodies lose in their Whole, is communicated to and dispersed among their small Parts. Now this Impetus, or relative Impulsive. Active Force of Bodies in Morion, is evidently both in Reafor and Experience, always proportional to the Quantity of Marion. Therefore, according to Mr. Leibnitz's Principles,: this impulsive active Force being always the same in Quantiny, the Quantity of Motion also must of necessity be always . the same in the Universe. Tet elsewhere, he inconsistently ac-Immeledges, [§ 99,] that the Quantity of Motion is Not alwars the same: And in the Asta Ernditorum, ad Ann. 1686; pag. 161, he endeavours to Prove that the Quantity of. Motion in the Universe is Not always the same from that very Argument, and from that single Argument only, (of the Quantity of Impulsive Force being always the fame,) which, if in mas true, would necessarily infer on the contrary, that the Quantity of Motion could not but be always the fame. The Reason of his Inconsistency in this Matter, was his computing, by a monderfully unphilosophical Error, the Quantity of Impulfine Force in an Ascending Body, from the Quantity of its Macceniand of the Space described by it in Ascending, without considering the Time of its ofcending. * " Suppono, Says * ASIa 14 be, santa vi opus afferad clovendum corpus A unius libra: Erndit. ad fining, ad altimatinem quarter minarum, quama opus est ad Ann. 1686. erribin " all electric elevan- pag. 162.

330 Cinquieme Replique de Mr. Clarke.

98. Si l'Ame est une Substance, qui remplit le Sensorium, ou le lieu dans lequel elle apperçoit les Images des choses, qui y sont

si la même Force est réquile pour élever le Corps A du " poids d' Une Livre à la hauteur de quatre aunes, que « celle qui éleve le Corps B du poids de quatre Livres à " la hauteur d'une aune. C'est de quoi les Cartestens, & 66 les autres Philosophes & Mathematiciens de notre temps " conviennent. Or il s'ensuit de là, que le Corps A'en « tombant de la hauteur de quatre aunes, acquiert pré-« cisément la même Force, que le Corps B en tombant de " la hauteur d' Une aune ". Mais Mr. Leibnitz se trompe fort en faisant cette supposition. Ni les Cartesiens, ni les autres Philosophes ou Mathematiciens n'accordent jamais de qu'il suppose, excepté dans les cas où les Temps que les Corps employent à monter ou à descendre, sone égaux entre eux. Si une Pendule décrie une Cycloide, l'Arc de la Cycloïde décrite en montant, sera comme la Force avec laquelle le Corps suspendu commence à monter du plus bas point; parce que les temps qu' il employe à monter, sont égaix. Et si des Corps égaux petent le bras d' une Balance, à differences distances de l'Axe de la Balance; les Forces des Corps seront en proportion comme les Arcs qu'ils décrivent en pesant, parce qu'ils les decestvent en même temps. Et si deux Globes égaux placer fine un Plan Horizontal, sont pouffez par des Forces inégales, ils décriront en temps égaux des Espaces proportionnels mux Forces qui les poufient. Ou si des Glober inegants sont pouffez avec des Forces égales, ils décriront en temps égante des Espaces reciproquement proportionnels à leurs Masses. Le dans tous ces cas, fi des Corps égante sont ponficulipar des Forces inegales ; les Forces imprimées, les Viteffes produites, & les Espaces décrits en temps égaux, seront propoitionnels I' un à l'antre. Et si les Corps sont inegants de Vitesse des plus grands Corps sera d'autant plus periter que les Corps sont plus grands; Done le Mouvement s'out résulte de la masse & de la vitesse prises ensemble) sera dans udis ocs cas, & per conféquent dans tous les autres cas uppeportionnel à la Parce imprimée. D'où il s'enfais clairement, pour le dire en passant, que fails même Percei inpulfive

98. If the Soul be a Substance which fills the Sensorium, or Place wherein it perceives the Images of Things conveyed to it; vet

" elevandum corpus B quatuor librarum usq; ad altitudi-" nem Unius Ulnæ, Omnis hæc à Cartesianis pariter ac cæ-" teris Philosophis & Mathematicis nostri temporis conce-" duncur. Hinc sequitur, corpus A delansum ex altitudi-" ne quatuor ulnarum, præcife tantum acquifivisse virium, " quantum B lapsum ex altitudine Unius Ulnæ". That is: "[I suppose the same Force is requisite to raise a Body A " of one Pound Weight, to the Height of four Tards; which " will raise the Body B of four Pounds Weight, to the Height " of One Tard. This is Granted both by the Cartesians, and " other Philosophers and Mathematicians of our Times. And " from bence it follows, that the Body A, by falling from " the Meight of four Yards, acquires exactly the same Force, s as the Body B by falling from the Height of One Tard. But in this Supposition, Mr. Leibnicz is greatly mistaken. Neither the Cartefians, nor any other Philosophers or Mathematicians ever grant this, but in such Cases only, where the Times of Ascent or Descent are equal. If a Pendulum oscillates in a Cycloid; the Arch of the Cycloid described in ascending, will be as the Force with which the pendulous Body basins to ascend from the lowest Point; because the Times of ascending are equal. And if equal Bodies librate upon the Arm of a Balance, at various Distances from the Axis of the Bahance; the Forces of the Bodies will be in Proportion as the Arches described by them in librating, because they librate in the same Time. And if two equal Globes lying upon an Horizontal Plain, be impelled by unequal Forces, they will in equal Times describe Spaces proportional to the Forces impalling them. Or if unequal Globes he impelled with equal Forces, they will in equal Times describe Spaces reciprocally proportional to their Masses. And in all these Gases, if equal Bodies be impelled by Unequal Forces, the Forces impressed, the Velocities generated, and the Spaces described in equal Times, will be proportional to one another. And if the Bodies he sunequal, the Velocity of the bigger Bodies will be so much less, as the Bodies are bigger; And therefore the Motion (arising from the Mass and Velocity tegether) will be

332 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

font portées; il ne s'ensuit point de la qu'elle doit être composée de Parties seint blables à celles de la Matiere, (Car les Parties de la Matiere sont des Substances distinctes

pulsive subsiste tossjours dans le Monde, comme Mr. Leibhitz i le prétend; il faut qu'il y ait tossjours le même Mondes i ment dans le Monde, ce qui est contraire à ce qu'il assirmes],

Mais Mr. Leibnitz confond les Cas où les temps sont égate, avec les Cas où les temps sont inégaux. Il conford particulierement le Cas où des corps montent & descendent aux extremitez des bras inégaux d'une Balance, (Alta Erudit. ad. ann. 1685. pag. 162; & ad ann. 1690, pag. 234; & ad ann. 1691, pag. 439; (9 ad ann. 1695, pag. 155;) if confond, dif-je, ce Cas avec celui des corps qui tombent en bas, & que l'on sette en haut, sans faire attention à l'inégue lite du temps. Car un corps avec la même Porce & la même Vitesse, décrira un plus grand Espace dans un tempri plus long: Il faut donc confiderer le temps; & l'on ne doit pas dire que les Forces sont proportionnelles aux Espaces, à moins que les temps ne soient egaux. Lors que les temps sont inégaux, les Forces des Corps égaux sont comme les Espaces appliquez aux temps. C'est en quoi les Carensens. & les autres Philosophes & Mathematiciens s'accordions tous. Ils disent tous que les Forces impulsives des Outes sont proportionnelles à leurs Montemens, & ils mesurent Mouvemens par leurs masses & leurs Vitesses prises ensembles & leurs Viteffes par les Espaces qu'ils décrivent, appliques aux temps dans lesquels ils les décrivent. Si uni Copps: jette en haut monte, en doublant sa Vitesse, quatre fois plus haut dans un temps double ; la Porce impulfive ferz augmentée, non pas à proporcion de l' Espace qu' il déscriesent montant, mais à proportion de cet Espace applique un tempe, d'est-à-dire, à proportion de 4 à 1, ou de 2 à 1. Car si, dans ce Cas, la Force étoit augmentée à proportion de 4 à i; & si le même corps, (ayant un mouvement d'Oscillat rion dans une Cycloide,) avec la même vitesse unablée, una décrit qu' un Arc double, & par confequent si la Force mes

yet it does not thence follow, that it must consist of serporeal Parts, (for the Parts of Body are distinct Substances independent on each other;) but the Whole Soul sees, and

in all these Cases, and in all Other Cases consequently, proportional to the Force imprest. [From whence, by the way, it plainly follows, that if there te always the same impulsive Force in the World, as Mr. Leibnitz affirms; there must be always the same Motion in the World, contrary to what he

affirms.]

But Mr. Leibnitz confounds these Cases where the Times are equal, with the Cases where the Times are unequal: And chiefly That of Bodies rising and falling at the Ends of the unequal Arms of a Balance, [Alla Erudit, ad Ann. 1686, Pag. 162; & ad Ann. 1690, Pag. 234; & ad Ann. 1691, Pag. 439; & ad Ann. 1695, Pag. 155; is by him confounded with That of Bodies falling downwards and thrown upwards, without allowing for the Inequality of the Time. . For a Body with one and the same Force, and one and, the same Velocity, will in a longer Time describe a greater Space; and therefore the Time is to be considered; and the Forces are not to be reckoned proportional to the Spaces, unless where the Times are equal. Where the Times are unequal, the Forces of equal Bodies are as the Spaces applied to the Times. And in This, the Cartesians and other Philosophers and Mathematicians agree; all of them making the impulfive Forces of Bodies proportional to their Motions, and meesuring their Motions by their Masses and Velocities together, and their Velocities by the Spaces which they describe, applied to the Times in which they describe them. If a Body, thrown upwards does, by doubling its Velocity, ascend four Times higher in twice the Time; its impulsive Force will be increased, not in the proportion of the Space described by its. Ascent, but in the Proportion of that Space applied to the Time; that is, in the Proportion of 4 to 1 or 2 to 1. For if, in this Case, the Force should be increased in the Proportion of 4 to 1; and, in oscillating in a Cycloid, the same Body, with the fame Velocity doubled, describes only a doubled Arch, and its Force is therefore only doubled; this Body, with one and the same Degree of Velocity, would have twice as

334 Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

stinctes & indépendantes l'une de l'autre; mais l'Ame toute entiere voit, entend, & pense, comme étant essentiellement un seul'Etre individuel.

99. Pour

que doublée; ce Corps, avec le même degré de vitesse, autroir deux sois autant de Force lors qu' il est jetté en Baut; que lors qu' il est poussé horizontellement : Ce qui est une contradiction manisceste. La contradiction est la même quand on assure, que quoi qu' un Corps à l'extremité des bras inégaux d'une Balance, en doublant sa vitesse, si acquiere qu' une double Force impulsive, cependant, si on le jette en baut avec la même vitesse doublée, il acquiert une Force impulsive quadruple; je dis que ce sentiment renserme la même contradiction : Car des Corps égaux avec des vitesses égales, ne peuvent pas avoir des Forces impulsives

inégales.

Galilée, en supposant que la Gravité est uniforme, a de montré le mouvement des Corps projettez dans les Milieux qui ne font point de resistance; & tous les Mathematiciens conviennent de ses Propositions, sans en excepter Mr. Leibnitz lui-même. Or si l'on suppose que le temps qu'un corps employe à tomber, est divisé en parties égales; puifque la Gravité est uniforme, & que par consequent elle agit également dans les parties égales du temps, il faut que par son action elle imprime & communique au corps qui tombe, des Forces, des Vitesses, & des monvemens égaux, en temps égaux. Et par conséquent la Porce impulsive. la Vitesse, & le Mouvement du corps qui tombe, augmenteront à proportion du temps de sa chute. Mais l'Espect décrit par le corps qui tombe, resulte en partie de la VItesse du Corps, & en partie du Temps qu'il employe à tomber ; de sorte qu'il est en raison composée de la Vitesse & du Temps, ou comme le Quarré de l'un ou de l'autre; & par consequent comme le Quarré de la Force inpulsive. Et par le même raisonnement on peut prouver, que lors qu' un Corps est jetté en baut avec une Forte impulsive, la Hauteur à laquelle il montera, sera comme le Quarré de cette Force : Et que la Force réquise pour élever le Corps B, du poids de quatre Livres, à la hauteur d'une aune, elevera le Corps A, du poids d'Une Livre, (non pasand the Whole bears, and the Whole thinks, as being effectially one Individual.

99. In

much Force when thrown upwards, as when thrown horimontally: Which is a plain Contradiction. And there is the fame Contradiction in affirming, that although a Body at the end of the unequal Arms of a Balance, by doubling its velocity, acquires only a double impulsive Force, yet, by being thrown upwards with the same doubled Velocity, it acquires a quadruple impulsive Force; in this Assertion, I say, there is the same Contradiction: For equal Bodies with equal Velocities, cannot have unequal impulsive Forces.

Upon the Supposition of Gravity being Unisorm, Galilgo demonstrated the Motion of Projectiles in Mediums void of Refiftence; and his Propositions are allowed by all Mathematicians, not excepting Mr. Leibnitz himself. Now, supposing the Time of a falling Body to be divided into equal Parts; since Gravity is uniform, and, by being so, alls equally in equal Parts of Time, it must by its Action impress and communicate to the falling Body, equal impulsive Forces, Velocicies, and Motions, in equal Times. And therefore the impulsive Force, the Velocity, and the Motion of the falling Body, mill increase in Proportion to the Time of falling. But the Space described by the falling Body, arises partly from the Velocity of the Body, and partly from the Time of its falline; and so is in a compound ratio of them Both, or as the Square of either of them; and consequently as the Square of the impulsive Force. And by the same way of arguing, is thay be proved, that when a Body is thrown upwards with any impulsive Force, the Height to which it will ascend, will be, as the Square of that Force: And that the Force requifice to make the Body B, of four Pounds Weight, rife wh one Yard, will make the Body A, of One Pound Weight, rise up, (not four Yards, as Mr. Leibnitz represents, but) fixteen Yards, in quadruple the Time. For the Gravity of four

336 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

* Voïez
ci-defius
la Note,
§ 13 de
ma troifiéme Réplique.
† Voïez
ci-defius
la Note
fur § 93,
—95.

99. Pour faire voir que les * Forces actives qui sont dans le Monde, c'est-à-dire, la † Quantité du mouvement, ou la Force impulsive

à la hauteur de quatre aunes, comme Mr. Leibnitz le dit, mais) à la hauteur de seize aunes, en quatre sois le même temps. Car la Gravité du poids de quatre Livres dans une partie du temps, agit autant que la Gravité du poids d'Une

Livre en quatre parties du temps.

Mais Mr. Herman, dans sa Phoronomie, pag. 112, soutenant le parti de Mr. Leibnitz contre ceux qui disent que les Forces acquises par les corps qui tombent, sont proportionnelles aux temps qu'ils employent à tomber, ou aux Vitesses qu' ils acquierent; Mr. Herman, dis-je, assure que cela est fondé sur une fausse supposition, sçavoir que les Corps jettez en baut reçoivent de la Gravité qui leur resiste, un nombre égal d'impulsions en temps égaux. C'est tomme si Mr. Herman disoit, que la Gravité n' est pas uni-forme; &, par consequent, c' est renverser la Théorie de Galilée touchant les corps Projettez, dont tous les Géometres conviennent. Je crois que Mr. Herman s' imagine que plus le mouvement des Corps a de vitesse en montant, plus les Corps reçoivent d'impulsions; parce qu'ils rencontrent les particules [imaginaires] qui causent la Gravité. Ainsi le poids des corps sera plus grand lors qu' ils montent, & plus petit lors qu' ils descendent. Et cependant Mr. Leibnitz & Mr. Herman reconnoissent eux-mêmes, que la Gravité en temps égaux produit des vitesses égales dans les corps qui descendent, & qu' elle ôte des vitesses écales aux corps qui montent; & que par consequent elle est uniforme. Ils reconnoissent qu' elle est uniforme, lors qu' elle agit sur les Corps pour produire la Vitesse; & ils nient qu'elle soit uniforme, lors qu'elle agit sur eux pour produire la Force impulsive: De sorte qu'ils ne sont point d'accord avec eux mêmes.

Si la Force qu' un Corps acquiert en tombant, est comme l' Espace qu' il décrit; que l' on divise le Temps en parties égales; & si dans la premiere partie du temps il acquiert Une partie de Force; dans les deux prémieres parties du temps il acquerra quatre parties de Force; dans les trois premieres parties du temps, il acquerra neuf parties de Force; & ainsi du reste. Et par consé-

quent,

99. In order to show that the * Active *See above, Forces in the World (meaning the † Quan- my tity of Motion or Impulsive Force given to Reph, \$13.

the Note on Bodies,) +See above, the Note on § 93,...

four Pounds Weight in One part of Time, alls as much as the Gravity of one Pound Weight in Four Parts of Time.

But Mr. Herman, in his Phoronomia, Pag. 113, (arguing for Mr. Leibnitz against Those who hold that the Forces acquired by falling Bodies are proportional to the Times of falling, or to the Velocities acquired,) represents that this is founded upon a False Supposition, that Bodies thrown upwards receive from the Gravity which resists them, an equal Number of Impulses in equal Times. Which is as much as to fay, that Gravity is not uniform; and, by consequence, to overthrow the Theory of Galilæo concerning Projectiles, allowed by all Geometers. I suppose, he means that the swifter the Motion of Bodies is upwards, the more numerous are the Impulses; because the Bodies meet the [imaginary] gravitating Particles. And thus the Weight of Bodies will be greater when they move upwards, and less when they move downwards. And yet Mr. Leibnitz and Mr. Herman themselves allow, that Gravity in equal Times generates equal Velocities in descending Bodies, and takes away equal Velocities in ascending Bodies; and therefore is Uniform. In its action upon Bodies for generating Velocity, they allow it to be uniform; in its action upon them for generating impullive Force, they deny it to be uniform: And so are inconfistent with themselves.

If the Force acquired by a Body in falling, be as the Space described; let the Time be divided into equal parts; and if in the first part of Time it gain One part of Force, in the two first parts of Time it will gain four parts of Force, in the three first parts of Time it will gain nine parts of Force, and so on. And by consequence, in the second part of Time it will gain three parts of Force, in the third part of Time it will gain five parts of Force, in the fourth part of Time it will gain seven parts of Force, and so on. And therefore if the Action of Gravity for generating these Forces, be supposed, in the middle of the first part of Time, to be of One degree; it will, in the middle of the second, third, and fourth parts of Time, be of three, five, and seven degrees, and so on: That is, it will be proportional to

338 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

impulsive communiquée aux Corps; pour faire voir, dis-je, que ces Forces actives ne diminuent point naturellement, le sçavant Auteur

quent, dans la seconde partie du temps il acquerra trois parties de Force, dans la troisième partie du temps il acquerra cinq parties de Force, dans la quatrieme partie de temps il acquerra sept parties de Force, & ainsi du reste. Si l'on suppose donc que l'Astion de la Gravité pour produire ces Forces, a un degré au milieu de la premiere partie du temps; elle aura, au milieu de la seconde, de la troisième, & de la quatrième parties du temps, trois, cinq, & sept degrez, & ainsi du reste; c'est-à-dire, qu' elle sera proportionnelle au temps & à la vitesse acquises: &. par conséquent, au commencement du temps il n'y aura point de Gravité; de sorte que, faute de Gravité, le Corps ne tombera pas. Et selon le même raisonnement, lors qu' up Corps est jetté en baut, sa Gravité diminuera à mesure que sa vitesse diminue, & elle cessera lors que le Corps cesse de monter; & alors, faute de Gravité, le Corps demeurera dans l'air, & ne tombera plus. Tant il est vrai que le sentiment du sçayant Auteur sur ce Sujet, est rem. pli d'absurdirez.

Pour décider cette Question d'une maniere démonstrative; que l'on suspende deux Globes d'Acier par des Rayons égaux, ou des Filets d'une égale longueur; en sorte que lors qu' ils sont suspendus, & qu' ils se touchent l' un l' autre, les Rayons ou les Filets soient Paralleles. Que l'un de ces Globes soit toujours le même, & qu'il soit écarté de l'autre à la même distance dans toutes les Experiences suivantes. Que l'autre soit de telle grosseur que l'on voudra, & qu'il soit écarte du coté oppose à une distance reciproquement proportionnelle à son poids. Qu' on lâche ces deux Globes dans le même moment, en sorte qu'ils se puissent rencontrer dans le plus bas lieu de leur descente, où ils étoient suspendus avant que d'être écartez. Le prémier. Globe rébondira toujours de la même maniere, c' està-dire, à la même hauteur. Donc la Force de l' autre est equiours la même, lors que sa vitesse est reciproquement proportionnelle à son poids. Et par consequent, si son poids continue d'être le même, sa Force sera proportionstelle à sa vitesse. Q. E. D.

Bodies,) do not naturally diminish; this Learned Writer urges, that two fost unclassick Bodies meeting, together with equal

the Time and to the Velocity acquired: And, by conjequence, in the Boginning of the Time it will be none at all; and fo the Body, for mant of Gravity, will not full down. And by the Jame way of arguing, when a Body is thrown upwards, its gravity will decrease as its relocity decreases, and rease when the Body coases to ascent; and then, for want of gravity, it will rest in the Air, and fall down no more. So full of Absurdicies is the Notion of this Learned Author in this particular.

To decide this question demonstratively; let two pendulous globes of bardned Steel, be suspended by equal radii or Threads of equal length: So that when they hang down and touch each other, the Radii or Threads may be parallel. Let One of the Globes be constantly the same, and be drawn aside from the Other to one and the same distance in All the subsequent Trials: Let she Other be of Any Bigness, and be drawn while the contrary way to a Distance reciprocally proportional, to its Weight. Let Both of them then be let go at one and the fame moment of Time, so that they may meet each other at the lowest place of their Descent, where they hung before they were drawn aside: And the first Globe will always rebound wlike, from the Other. Wherefore the Force of the Other is always the same, when its Velocity is reciprocally proportional to its Weight. And by consequence, if its Weight remains the Jame, its Force will be proportional to its Velocity. Q. E.D.

an an

Auteur soutient, que deux Corps Mous & sans Ressort, se rencontrant avec des forces égales & contraires, perdent chacun tout leur mouvement, parce que ce mouvement est communiqué aux petites parties dont ils sont composez. Mais lors que deux Corps tout-à-fait Durs & sans Ressort perdent tout leur mouvement en se rencontrant, il s'agit de sçavoir que devient ce mouvement, ou cette force active & impulsive? Il ne sçau-roit être disperse parmi les parties de ces Corps, parce que ces parties ne sont susceptibles d' aucun tremoussement, faute de Ressort. Et si on nie que ces Corps doivent perdre leur mouvement total; je réponds qu' en ce cas-là, il s' ensuivra que les Corps durs & Elastiques réjailliront avec une double force, sçavoir, avec la force qui resulte du Ressort, & de plus avec toute la force directe & primitive, ou du moins avec une partie de cette force : ce qui est contraire à l'experience.

Ensin, l' Auteur ayant consideré la Démonstration de Mr. Newton, que j' ai citée ci-dessus, est obligé de * reconnoitre, que la Quantité du mouvement dans le monde n' est pas toûjours la même; & il a recours à un autre subtersuge, en disant que le mouvement & la force ne sont pas toûjours les mêmes en Quantité. Mais ceci est aussi contraire à l' Experience. Car la Force dont il s' agit ici, n' est pas cette force de la matiere.

± 5 99.

and contrary Forces, do for this only Reason lose each of them the Motion of their Whole, because it is communicated and dispersed into a Motion of their small Parts. But the Question is; when two perfectly HARD un-elastick Bodies lose their whole Motion by meeting together, what then becomes of the Motion or active impulsive Force? It cannot be dispersed among the Parts, because the parts are capable of no tremulous Motion for want of elasticity. And if it be denied, that the Bodies would lose the Motion of their Wholes; I answer: Then it would follow, that Elastick Hard Bodies would reflect with a double Force viz. the force arising from the elasticity. and moreover all (or at least part of) the original direct force: Which is contrary to experience.

At length, (upon the Demonstration I cited from Sir Isaac Newton,) he is obliged to * allow, that the Quantity of Motion * 599: in the World, is not always the same; And goes to another refuge, that Motion and Force are not always the same in Quantity. But this also is contrary to experience. For the Force here spoken of, is not the Z 2

Cinquiente Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

matiere, qu' on appelle + Vis inertize, laquelle continue effectivement d'être trajours la même, pendant que la Quantité de la matiere est la môme; mais la Force dont nous parlous ici, est la Force active, impulsive. & rélative, qui est toûjours || proportionnée à la Quantité du mouvement rélatif. eft

+ La Force de la Matiere, qu'on appelle Vis inertia, est cette Force passive, par laquelle la Marière continue d' elle même dans l'état où elle est, & ne sort jamais de cerétar qu'à Proportion de la puissance contraire qui agit sur elle. C'est une Force passive, non pas par laquelle (comme Mr. Leibnitz I ensend aprez Kepler, voiez l'Appendice Nº 7,) la Maciere resuste au mouvement; mais par laquelle la Matiere resiste également à tout ce qui pourroit changer l' état où elle est, soit qu'elle se trouve en repos, ou en movdement: De sorte que la même Force réquise pour donner une cerraine Vitesse à une certaine Quantité de Matiere qui est en repos, est aussi toujours réquise pour faire perdre ce même degré de vitesse à la même Quantité de Matiere, & pour la reduire à l'état de repos où elle étoit auparavant. Cette Vis inertia est toûjours proporrionnée à la Quantité de la Matiere; & par conséquent elle est toujours la même sans aucune variation, soit que la Matiere se trouve en rejos ou en mouvement : & elle ne passe jamais d'un Corps à un autre. Sans cette Vis inertia, la moindre Force mettroit en mouvement la Matiere qui est on repos, quelque grande qu'en fût la Quantité; & cette même Quantité de Matiere étant en mouvement, quelque grande qu' en fût la vitesse, seroit arrêtée par la moindre force, fans aucun choc. De forte qu' à parler proprement, toute la Force de la Matiere, soit qu'elle se trouve en repos ou en monvement, toute son Alion & sa Re-alion, toute son Impulsion & sa Resistance, n' est autre chose que cette *Vis inertie* en differentes Circonflances.

C'est-à-dire, proportionnée à la Quantité de La Matiere & à la vitesse, & non (comme Mr. Leibnitz l'affure, Alla Erudit, ad Ann. 1695, pag. 156,) à la Quantité de la Matiere & au Quarre de la Vitesse. Voiez ci-deffus la Nove

für § 93-----95.

† Vis inertia of Matter, (which continues indeed always the same, so long as the Quantity of Matter continues the same:) but the Force here meant, is relative Active impulsive Force; which is always || proportional to the Quantity of Relative Motion;

† The Vis inertiæ of Matter, is That Passive Force, by which it always continues of itself in the State 'tis in; and never changes That State, but in proportion to a contrary Power assing upon it. Its That Passive Force, not by which (as Mr. Leibnitz from Kepler understands it, See Appendix, Na 7,) Mutter resists Motion; but by which it equally resists Any Change from the State itis in, either of Rest for Motion: So that the very same Force, which is requisite to give any certain Velocity to any certain Quantity of Maser at Rest, is about exactly requisite to reduce the same Quantity of Matter from the same degree of Velocity to a state of Rest again. This Vis inertia is always proportional to the Quantity of Matter; and therefore continues invariably the same, in all possible States of Matter, whether at Rest or in Motion; and is never transferred from One Body to another, Without this Vis, the Least Force would give Any Velocity to the Greatest Quantity of Monter at Rest; and the Greatest Quantity of Matter in Any Velocity of Motion, would be stopped by the Least Force, without any the least shock at all. So that, properly and indeed, All Force in Matter either at Rest or in Morion, all its Action and Reaction, all Impulse and all Resistence, is nothing but this Vis inertize in different Circumstances.

That is; proportional to the Quantity of Matter and the Velocity; not (as Mr. Leibnitz affirms. Acta Erudic ad Ann. 1696, pag. 1565) to the Quantity of Matter and the Equare to the Velocity. See above, the Note on 18 29,

As

Sec. 34. 32

est ce qui paroit constamment par l'Experience, à moins que l'on ne tombe dans quelque erreur, faute de bien supputer & de déduire la Force contraire, qui naît de la Resistance que les Fluides font aux Corps de quelque maniere que ceux-ci se puissent mouvoir, & de l'Action contraire & continuelle de la Gravitation sur les Corps

jettez en baut.

100—102. J' ai fait voir dons la derniere Section, que la * Force active, selon la Définition que j' en ai donnée, diminue continuellement & naturellement dans le Monde materiel. Il est évident que ce n'est pas un défaut, parce que ce n'est qu' une suite de l'inactivité de la Matiere. Car cette inactivité est non seulement la cause, comme l' Auteur le remarque, de la diminution de la Vitesse à mesure que la Quantité de la Matiere augmente; (ce qui à la verité n' est point une diminution de la Quantité du mouvement;) mais elle est aussi la cause pourquoi des Corps solides, parfaitement Durs, & fans Ressort, se rencontrant avec des forces égales & contraires, perdent tout leur mouvement & toute leur Force active, comme je l'ai montré ci-dessus; & par consequent îls ont besoin de quelque autre Caule pour receuoir un nouveau mouvement.

103. F

^{*} Voiez ci-dessus la Note sur \$ \$3-----95; & la III

As is constantly evident in Experience; except where some Error has been committed, in not rightly computing and subducting the contrary or impeding Force, which arises from the Resistence of Fluids to Bodies moved any way, and from the continual contrary Action of Gravitation upon Bodies thrown upwards.

100-102. That + Active Force, in the Sense above-defined, does naturally diminish continually in the marerial Universe; hath been shown in the last Paragraph. That this is no Defect, is evident; because itis only a Consequence of Matter being lifeless, void of Mativity, unactive and inart. For the Inertia of Matter, causeth, not only (as this learned Author observes.) that Velocity decreases in proportion as Quantity of Matter increases, (which is indeed no decrease, of the Quantity of Motion;) but also that solid and perfectly bard Bodies, void of Elasticity, meeting together with equal and contrary Forces. lose their whole Motion and Affine Force, (as has been above shown,) and must depend upon some other Cause for new Motion,

arman in a Denar a

[†] See above, the Note on \$ 93-95; & Third Reply,

346 Cinquiome Replique de Mr. Clarke.

Ecrits précedens, qu' il n' y a aucun défaut dans les choses dont on parle iei. Car pourquoi Dieu n' auroit-il pas eu la liberté de faire un Monde, qui continueroit dans l'état où il est presentement, aussi long temps ou aussi peu de temps qu' il le jugeroit à propos, & qui seroit en suite changé, & recevroit telle forme qu' il voudroit lui donner, par un changement sage & convenable, mais qui peut être seroit tout-à-fait au dessit des loix du Méchanisme? L' Auteur sont tient + que l' Univers no peut diminuer en

total du Méchanime? L'Auteur foutive Ecrit, sient † que l'Univers no peut diminuer en \$ 40, 20, perfection; qu'il n'y a aucune raison qui et ve puisse † borner la Quaptité de la Matiere; crit, \$ 29 que * les Perfections de Dien l'obligent à produire totijours autant de Matiere qu'il

lui est possible; & qu' un Monde borné est une † Fistion impracticable. F' ai inferé de cette doctrine, que le Monde doit être nécessairement infini & éternel. C'est aux Sçavans d'juger si cette Consequence est bien fondés.

104, 106. L' Auteur dit à present, 104. que | l'Espace n' est pas un Ordre ou une Situation, mais un Ordre de Situations. Co qui n' empêche pas que la même Objection ne subsiste toûjours, sçavoir, qu' un Ordre de Situations n' est pas une Quantité, comme

Voiez ci-destus l'Apostille de Mr. Leibnitz à la sin de fon in Regie.

102. That none of the things here referred to, are Defects; I have largely shown in my former Papers. For why was not God at Liberty to make a World, that should continue in its present Form as long or as foort a time as he thought fit, and should then be altered (by such Changes as may be very wife and Fit, and yet Impossible perhaps to be performed by Mechanism,) into whatever other Form he himself pleased? Whether my Inference from this Learned Author's affirming + that the Universe cannot diminish in Perfection, that there is no possible Reason which can + limit the Quan- + Fourth tity of Matter, that * God's Perfections Paper, 5 oblige him to produce always as much Mat, 40,20,21, and ter as he can, and that a Finite Material Fifth Pa-Universe is an in Impracticable Fistion; whe-1945 29. ther (I say) my Inferring, that (according to these Notions) the World must needs have been both Infinite and Eternal, be a just Inference or no. I am willing to leave to the Learned, who shall compare the Papers, to judge.

† Space is not on Order or Situation, but † 5 104. an Order of Situations. But still the Objection remains; that an Order of Situations is not Quantity, as Space is. He re-

^{*} See above, Mr. Leibnitz's Postscript to his Fourth Paper.

348 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

l'Espace l'est. L'Auteur renvoye donc à la Section 54, où il croit avoir prouvé que l'Ordre est une Quantité. Et moi je renvoye à ce que j' ai dit sur cette Section dans ce dernier Ecrit; où je crois avoir prouvé que l'Ordre n'est pas une Quantité. Ce que l'Auteur dit aussi touchant le * Temps, renserme évidemment cette Absurdité: sçavoir, que le Temps n'est que l'Ordre des choses successives; à que cependant il ne laisse pas d'être une véritable Quantité; parce qu'il est, non seulement l'Ordre des choses successives, mais aussi la Quantité de la Durée qui intervient entre chacune des choses particulieres qui se successione dans

\$ 106.

manifeste.

*§ 105.

Dire que † l'Immensité ne signisse pas un Espace sans bornes, & que l'Eternité ne signisse pas une Durée ou un Temps sans sin, c'est (ce me semble) soutenir que les mots n' ont aucune signification. Au lieu de raisonner sur cet Article, l'Auteur nous renvoye à ce que certains Théologiens & Philosophes, (qui étoient de son sentiment,) ont pensé sur cette matière. Mais se n' est pas là de quoi il s'agit entre lui & moi.

cet Ordre. Ce qui est une Contradiction

107—109. J'ai dit que parmi les reboses possibles, il n'y en a aucune qui soit plus miraculeuse qu' une autre, par rapport à Dieu; & que par conséquent le Miracle ne consiste dans aucune difficulté qui se trouve dans la Nature d'une chose qui doit

être

fers therefore to § 54, where he thinks he has proved that Order is a Quantity: And I refer to what I have said above in this Paper, upon that Section; where I think I have proved, that it is not a Quantity. What he alledges concerning || Time likewise, amounts plainly to the following Absurdity: that Time is only the Order of Things successive, and yet is truly a Quantity; because it is, not only the Order of Things successive, but also the Quantity of Duration intervening between each of the Particulars succeeding in That Order. Which is an express Contradiction.

To say that * Immensity does not signify * \$ 106. Boundless Space, and that Eternity does not signify Duration or Time without Beginning and End, is (I think) affirming that Words have no meaning. Instead of reasoning upon this Point, we are referred to what certain Divines and Philosophers (that is, such as were of this Learned Author's Opinion,) have acknowledged: Which

is not the Matter in Question.

gard to God, no one Possible thing is more miraculous than another; and that therefore a Miracle does not consist in any Difficulty in the Nature of the Thing to be done, but merely in the Unusualness of God's

350 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

être faite, mais qu' il consiste simplement en ce que Dieu le fait rarement. Le mot de Nature, & ceux de Forces de la Nature, de Cours de la Nature, &c. sont des mots qui signifient simplement, qu' une chose arrive ordinairement ou frequemment. Lors que un Corps humain reduit en poudre est ressuscité, nous disons que c'est un Miracle; lors qu' un corps humain est engendré de la maniere ordinaire, nous disous que c'est une chose na-turelle; & cette distinction est uniquement fondée sur ce que la Puissance de Dieu produit l'une de ces deux choses ordinairement, & l'autre rarement. Si le soleil (ou la Terre) est arrêté soudainement, nous difons que c'est un Miracle; & le mouvement continuet du solcil (ou de la Terre) nous paroit que l'une de ces deux choses est ordinaire, l'autre extraordinaire. Si les hommes fortoient ordinairement du Tombeau, comme le Bled sort de la Semențe, nous dirions sertainement que ce seroit aust une chose naturelle: Et si le soleil (ou la Terre) étoit toajours immobile, cela nous paroitroit naturel; & en ce cas là nous regarderions le mouvement du soleil (ou de la Terre,) comme une chose miraculeuse. Le sçavant Auteur ne dit rien contre ces Raisons [ces † grandes raisons, comme il les appelle,] qui sont si évidentes. Il se contente de nous ronvoyer encore aux manieres de parler ordinaires de certains Philosophes & de cercains Théo-

†§ 108.

God's doing it. The Terms, Nature, and Powers of Nature, and Course of Nature, and the like, are nothing but empty Words; and fignify merely, that a thing ufually or frequently comes to pass. The Raising a Human Body out of the Dust of the Earth, we call a Miracle; the Generation of a Human Body in the ordinary way, we call Natural; for no other Reason, but because the Power of God effects one usually, the other unufually. The fudden flopping of the Sun (or Earth,) we call a Miracle; the continual Motion of the Sun (or Earth,) we call Natural; for the very same Reason only, of the one's being usual, the other unusual. Did Men usually arise out of the Grave, as Corn grows out of Seed fown, we should certainly call That also natural: And did the Sun (or Earth) conftantly stand still, we should then think That to be natural, and its Motion at any time would be miraculous. Against these evident Reafons, [ces + grandes Raifons,] this learned + 5 108. Writer offers nothing at all; but continues barely to refer us to the Vulgar Forms of Speaking of certain Philosophers and Divines: Which (as I before observed) is not the Matter in Question.

352 Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

Théologiens; mais, comme je l' ai déjà remarqué ci dessus, ce n'est pas là de quoi il s'agit entre l' Auteur & moi.

une matiere qui doit être décidée par la Raisuo son par l'Autorité, on nous || renvoye encore à l'Opinion de certains Philosophes & Théologiens. Mais, pour ne pas insister sur cela; que veut dire le sçavant Auteur par une * difference réelle & interne entre ce qui est miraculeux, & ce qui

terne entre ce qui est miraculeux, & ce qui se ine l'est pas; ou entre f des Operations naturelles on non naturelles, absolument, operations à Dieu deux Principes d'action differents & réellement distincts? Ou qu' une chose soit plus difficile à Dieu qu' une autre? S'il ne le croit pas, il s' ensuit, ou que les mots d'Action de Dieu naturelle of surnaturelle, sont des Termes dont la Signification est uniquement rélative aux hommes; parce que nous avons accoutumé de dire qu' un effet ordinaire de la puissance de Dieu est une chose naturelle, or qu' un effet extraordinaire de cette même puissance est une chose surnaturelle; (ce qu' on appelle les Forces

de la Nature, n'étant véritablement qu' un mot sans aucun sens:) Ou bien il s'ensuit que par une Action de Dieu surnaturelle, il faut entendre ce que Dieu fait lui-même immédiatement; & par une Action de Dieu naturelle, ce qu'il fait par l'intervention des Causes secondes. L'Auteur se déclare

nito et l'actività dettina con la titulativa del con la fillio. La contrata del con

in a design of the second of the seconds that, in a Boint of Realowand not of Aushority, we are full again | remitted to the | 5 110. Opinions of certain Philosophers and Divines. But, to omit This: What does this Learned Writer thean by a real Internal Difference + \$ 110: between what is miraculous, and not miraculous ; or between * Operations natural; * § 111. and not natural prabiolately, and with regard to God an Does houthink there are in God two different and really distinct Principles or Powers of Acting, and that one thing is more difficult to God than another? if not : then either a natural and a supernatural Action of God, are Terms whole Signification is only relative to Us; we calling an usual Effect of God's Power, naturul; and an unusual one, supernatural; the * force of Nature being in truth, no-+5 112.
thing but an empty word: Or elfe, by the One must be meant That which God does immediately Himself; and by the Other; that which he does mediately by the in-firumentality of fecond Causes. The farmer of these Distinctions, is what this Learned Author is here professedly oppofing. The latter is what he exprelly difchains, I 117; where he allows that Angels may work True Miracles., And yet, belides

334 Cinquieme Réfilique de Mr. Clarke.

déclare ouvertement dans cette partie de son Ecrit, contre la premiere de ces deux Distintions; & il rejette formellement la seconde dans le Section 1131 mail reconnoit que les Anges peuvent fains de voritables Miracles. Cependant ja ne prois par que l'ampuisse inventer une troisions la finction sur la matiere dont il s'agit icili

Il est touted fait der assanchle d'appeller | \$113, | l'Atmation un Missalez et de dire que les un Tanire qui me dois point entrer dans la Philosophie; quoique mais asons se sur déclaré d'une mantière distinse et formelle.

Quà cauja efficiente he Attractiones peragantur, co. Cost-u-dire. "Iè ne recherche point ici quelle est la cause Esseruir de res Armactions. "Ge che l'appelle "Attraction, est peut-erre cause par quelque impulson, on de quelque autre manière qui nois est inconnue. Je ne me de quelque autre manière qui nois est inconnue. Je ne me l'assatu mor d'Attraction qu' en gotient, pour des guer re, quelle que sois apprenions par les Phénomenes de la Vatraction que nois apprenions par les Phénomenes de la Vatraction quels Coppe autreme l'uni ancre, se quelle sons ten roure, quels Coppe autreme l'uni ancre, se quelle sons ten convenable de réclièreme l'uni ancre, se quelle sons en convenable de réclièreme l'uni ancre, se quelle sons se la Vatraction "Et alitiers: "Je considere ses Principes, "non comme des sonnes sies suditex Oceates, quell do flagorisme des Loix Universelles de la Nature, puil y a actuellement de res principes, mes de la Nature, qu'il y a actuellement de res principes quoi qu' on me puille pas encore en rexpiquer les capitals de les Schoels que de la Nature, qu'il y a actuellement de res principes quoi qu' on me puille pas encore en rexpiquer les capitals de les Schoels que de courre specifiques de la Nature, qu'il y a actuellement de res principes quoi qu' on me puille pas encore un rexpiquer les capitals de les schoels sont cerraines Farrets Actives l'observation de de Quelles les choles ont cerraines Farrets Actives l'observation de de l'alie de de certe positione certaines farrets actives l'observation de les choles ont certaines Farrets Actives l'observation de de l'est choles ont certaines Farrets Actives l'observation de de l'est choles ont certaines Farrets Actives l'observation de l'est de les choles ont certaines Farrets Actives l'observationes de la la les choles ont certaines Farrets Actives l'observationes de la la les choles ont certaines Farrets Actives l'observationes de la la les choles de la la les choles de la la les choles de la la les contres de la la les contres de la la les contres d

.511 `

on Peners of Alman

caufam Chavitans mongom stable of the dispute

besides these Two, I think no other Distinction can possibly be imagined,

s and the second of the second

It is very unreasonable to call * Attrac * \$113.

Bion a Miracle, and an unphilosophical

Term; after it has been so often distinctly

† declared, that by That Term we do not

mean

7 Qua causa efficience ha Artractiones peragantur, in id verò hic non inquiro. Quam ego Attrallionem appello, fieri lane potest ut ea efficiatur Impulsu, vel alio aliquo modo nobis ignoto. Hane vocem Attrastions ita hic aecipi velim, ut in imiversim solumnodo vim aliquam significare intelligacir, qua corpora al se mutuo tendant; cuicunque demum causa attribuenda sit illa vis. Nam ex phaenomenis Natura illud nos prius edoctos oportet, quanant corpora fe invicem Attrahant, & quenam fint Leges & Proprietates istius Artractionis; quam in id inquirere par sit, quanam Efficiente Causa peragatur Attractio. Newtoni Optice, Qu. 23, pag. 222. Atq; hæc quidem Principia confidero, non ut sceultas Qualitates, que ex Specificis rerum Formis oriri fingantur, sed ut universales Natura Leges, quibus res ipsa sunt formata. Nam Principia quidem talia revera existere, ostendunt Phanomena Nature; licer ipsorum cause que sint, nondum fuerit explicatum. Affirmare fingulas rerum species, specificis præditas esse qualitatibus occultis, per quas ez Vint cerram in Agendo habeant; hoc utiq; est Nihil dicere. At ex phanomenis Natura, duo vel tria derivare generalia Motus Principia : & deinde explicare quemadmodum proprietates & actiones rerum corporearum omnium ex Principiis istis consequantur, id verò magnus esset fastus in Philosophia progressus, quamsi Principiorum istorum Cau-Iz nondum effent cognitz: Id. ibid. Pag. 344. Phanomena Cœlorum & maris nostri per Vim Gravitatis exposui, sed causam Gravitatis nondum affignavi. Oritur utique bæg A 2 2

Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

356

forvelle, qu' en nous servant de ce Terme, nous ne prétendans pas exprimer la Cause qui

" duire des Phénomenes de la Nature, deux ou trois Prin-" cipes généraux de mouvement; & ensuite expliquer " comment les Proprietez & les Actions de coutes les cho-" ses materielles suivent de ces Principes; ce seroit faire " un grand progrès dans la Philosophie, quoi que l' on me connût pas embre les Ganjes du ces Principes." Es dans un autre endroit : " J'ai explique les Phénomenes des " Cieux & de la Mer par la Force de la Gravité; mais Tije h'en ai pas encore affigne la Chuje. C'est une Force " produite par quelque Chule, qui pénétre juiqu' aux " Centres du Soleil & des Planetes, sans rien perdre de sa "Force: Et elle n'agit pas proportionnellement aux "Surfaces des Particules sur lesquelles elle agit, comme se les Caules Mechaniques ont accourume de le faire, mais proportionnellement à la Quantité de la Matiere solide : Et fon Action s'étend de tous cotez à des distances immenses, diminuant roujours en Raison doublee des di-41 stances. Mais je n'ai pas encore pû déduire des Phénomenes la Cause de ces proprietez de la Gravite: 44 % je ne fais point d' Hypotheses. Newton. Optic. pag. 322 & 344. & Princip. Philipoph. Schol. generale sub finem.

Regulated interests to much a set Propertice and the plant of the state of t i terrenugti in a transfer of the context of the m + 1, 6t 300 est (Consubration) Medical and Sq "#". manders, and the statement and deposit on the rest of the six of congression with by the succession Control of the second of the second 1947 Sept 2 90 1 A AMERICA STATE and and from a few fait from the figure of a latinus on a los or the radio diagram of the sales राज्य व केर १४६ वर्ष व असामीयहरू और विकास हार्य के स्पित्रहें होते हुने हुने Some of the money and the other miles mente fraggiant house, it ver n inrepublic Burgales eliante trace of a thoron Ca English others we give a dd one but the English as है। ्त्रामुक्त २००० ने कार्र प्रमुखील ततक है की हैं हैं। and I accommend to the second that the first in the second of the second

mean to express the Cause of Bodies tending towards each other, but barely the Effect,

Vis à causa aliqua, que penetrat ad usque centra Solis & Planetarum, fine virtutis diminutione; quæque agit non pro quantitate Superficierum particularum in quas agit, (ur solent cause mechanica,) sed pro quantitate materia solida a & cujus actio in immensas distantias undique extenditur, decrescendo semper in duplicata ratione distantiarum. Rationem verb harum Gravitatis proprietatum ex Phanomenis nondum porui deducere, & Hypotheses non fingo. Principia Philos. Schol, generale fub finem. i. c. What the efficient Cause of these Attractions is: I do not here inquire. What I call Attraction, may possibly be caused by some impulse, or some other way unknown to us. I we the Word Attraction, only In general, to fightly the Force by which Bodies tend towards each other; whatever be the Gause of that Force. For mon must first learn from the Phanomena of Nature, what Bodies attract each other, and what the taws and Properties of that Attraction, before tis proper to inquire what the efficient ! Cause of Attraction is. Again : I consider these Principles, not as occult Qualities, imagined to artife from the specifick Forms of Things; but as Universal Laws of Nather; according to which the Things themselves were formed. For that such Principles do really exist, appears from the Phanomena of Nature; though, what the Causes of them are, be not yet explained. To affirm that every distinct Species of Things, is indued with specifick occult Qualities, by means whereof the Things have certain Adive Forces; this indeed is saying Nothing. But to deduce from the Phanomena of Nature, two or three general Principles of Motion; and then to explain how the Properties and Allions of all corporeal Things follow from those Principles . This would be a great Progress in Philosophy, though the Causes of those Principles were not yet discovered. Again: I have explained the Phenomena of the heavens and the Sea, by the Force of Gravity; but the Cause of Gravity I have not jet affigued. It is a Force arising from some. Cauje, which reaches to the very Centers of the Sun and Plan nets, without any diminution of its Force: And it alls, not pro-portionally to the Sartaces of the Particles it alls upon, as Mechanina Genfes nie to do; but proportionally to the Quantity of Solid Matter: And its Affion reaches every way to im-mense Distances, decreasing always in a duplicate ratio of the Distances, But the Caple of these Properties of Gravity, I have not yet found deducible from Phanomena: And Hypotheses I make not.

Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke. 358

qui fair que les Corps tendent d'un vers d' putre, mais, seulement l'Effet de sette Carese, ou le Phénomene même, & les Loix on les Proportions selon lesquelles les Corps tendent I un vers l'autre, comme on les désouvre par l'Experience, quelle gu' en puisse être la Cause. Il est encore plus déraisonnable de ne vouloir point admettra la Gravitation ou l'Attraction dans le sens que nous lui donnons, seson lequel elle est certainement un Phénomene de la Nature: de prétendre en même temps que noies admettique une Hypothele aust étrange que l'est † \$ 109 & colle de † l'Harmonie préétablie, selon la-92; & 87, quelle | l' Ame & le Corps d'un bomme n' Voicz l'ent pas plus d'influence l'un sur l'autre, que deux Horloges, qui vont également bien. dice No 5. quelque éloignées qu'elles soient ? une de l'autre, & sans qu'il y ait entre elles au-Il est viai que l' cune action reciproque. Auteur dit, que Dieu * prévoyant les inclinations de chaque Ame, a formé des commencement la grande Machine de l' vois d'une telle maniere, qu' en vertu des fimples Loix du Machanilme, les Carps humains regoivent des mouvemens convens bles, comme étant des parties de grande Machine. Mais est it passible. + voiez l' de - pareils mouvemens. O qui ant diver lifiez que le sont ceux des Corps buma saint products par un pur Méchanilma que la Volonté & l'Esprit agi Corps,? Est-il enoyable, que lors que

Appendice, Nº 13.

":)

89, 90.

Appen-

¥ § 92.

Ó

ľ

W IFG

1

3

Í

ſ

ì

I,

ţ

1

or the Phenomenon it felf, and the Lazua or Proportions of that Tendency discovered, by Experience; whatever be or be not the Cause of it. And it seems still more unreasonable, not to admit Gravitation or Attraction in This fenfe, in which it is manifestly an actual Phanomenon of nature, and yet at the same time to expect that there should be admitted so strange an Hypothesis, as the * barmania prastabilita; * 5 109 which is that the Soul and Body of a and 92, and Man have no more Influence upon, each 87,89,900 others Motions and Affections, than the pendix, Clocks, which, at the greatest distance from N° s. each other, go alike, without at all affecting each other. It is alleged indeed, that God, + foreseeing the Inclinations of every + & 92. Man's Soul, to contrived at first the great Machine of the material Universe, as that; by the mere necessary Laws of Mechanism, suitable Morions should be excited in Haman Bodies, as Parts of that great Machine, But is it possible, that such | Kinds of Mor | see Aptian, and of such variety, as those in Hu-pendix, man Bodies are; should be performed by No 13. mere Mechanism, without any Influence of Will and Mind upon them? Or is it credible, that when a Man has it in his Power to resolve and know a Month before hand, what he will do upon such a particular Day or Hour to come; is it credible, I say, that his Body shall by the mere Power of Me-chanifin, impressed originally upon the material Aa 4

bomme forme une resolution, & qu'il sçait, en mois par avance, ce qu'il fera un certain jour ou à une certaine beure; est-il croyable, dis-je, que son Corps, en vertu d' um simple Méchanisme qui a été produit dans le Monde Materiel des le commencement de la Création, se conformera ponétuellement à toutes les resolutions de l'Esprit de cet bomme au temps marque? Selon cette Hypothese, tous les Raisonnements Philosophiques, fondez sur les Phénomenes & sur les Experiences, deviennent inubiles. Gar, fi l' Harmonie préétablie est véritable, un homme ne voit, n'entend, & ne sent rien, & il ne meut point son Corps : Il | so imagine feulement voir, entendre, sentir, & moudour fon corps. Et si les bommes étoient perfitadez que le Corps bumain n' est qu' une pure Machine, & que tous ses mouvemens qui paroissent volontaires, sont produits par les Loix nécessaires d' un Méchanisme materiel, sans aucune influence ou operation de l'Mone sur le Corps; ils conclurraient biendot que cette Machine est l' Homme tour entier. O que l'Ame Harmonique, dans l'Hypod these d' une Harmonie préétablie, n'est gus une pure fiction & une vaine imagination. De plus: Quelle difficulté évite ton pur le moyen d'une si étrange Hypothese d'On si évite que celle-ci, scavoir, qu' d'n'est pur possible de concevoir comment une Bubstance immaterielle peut agir sur la Matiere: Mais Dieu n'ast-il pas une Substance im-materielle?

materielle ?

Voicz dice, Nº 12;

terial Universe at its Creation, punctually conform it self to the Resolutions of the Man's Mind at the Time appointed? According to This Hypothesis, All Arguments in Philosophy, taken from Phanomena and Experiments, are at an end. For, if the Harmonia prastabilita be true, a Man does not indeed see, not bear, not feel any. thing nor moves by Body; but * only * see Apdreams that he fees, and hears, and feels, and pendix, moves his Body. And if the World can No 12. once be perswaded, that a Man's Body is a mere Machine; and that all His feemingly voluntary Motions are performed by the mere necessary Laws of corporeal Mechamiffn, without any Influence, or Operation, or Action at all of the Soul upon the Body.; they will foon conclude, that this Machine is the whole Man; and that the barmonical Soul, in the Hypothelis of an barmonia: prafiabilita, is merely a Fiction and a Dream. Besides: What Difficulty is there avoided, by to strange an Hypothesis? This only; that it cannot be conceived (it feeris,) how immaterial Substance should att upon Mutter. But is not God an immaterial Substance? And does not He act upon Matter? And what greater Difficulty is there in conceiving how an immiterial Sub-Hance should act upon Matter, than in conceiving how Matter alls upon Mafter? Is in not as ealy to conceive, how certain The second of th

354 Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

déclare ouvertement dans cette partie de son Ecrit, contre la premiere de ces deux Distintions; & il rejette formellement la seconde dans le Section 1171 mail reconnoit que les Anges peuvent fains de voritables Miracles. Capendant ja ne crais par que l'empuisse inventer une troisions Instinction sur la matiere dont il s'agit icil

Il est toutent fait décassonnable d'appeller § 113, Il l'Armation un Missalez de de dure que les un Tarme qui me dois point entrer dans la Philosophie; quoique made esons se sons vant déclaré à d'una mantère distincte de formelle,

> † Qua causa efficiente ha Attrattiones peragantur, &c. C'often dire. " je ne recherche point ici quelle est la " Capie Efficient de ces Armactions. 11Ge duc y empete " Attraction, est pent-erre cause par quelque impalses, un de quelque autre manière qui nous est incomme. Je ne me " lassidu mot d' Attraction qu' en général, pour deligner la Rocce par laquelle les porps tendent l'un vers l'anse tre, quelle que foit la Cause de cerre Force. Car il " faut que sions apprenions par les Phonomenes de la Na-"ture, quels Copsis incirent i unit antre est quelles font let "Loix of fes Proprietes de neuce Attraction, avant qu'il soit convenable de rechiercher Quelle eff la Cause efficiente de "1 Auraction ". Et ailleurs: " Je confidere ces Principes is non comme ties Qualitex Occides que'l', da lupposerois " naitre des Hormes Specifiques des Choles; mais comme des "Low Universeller de la Nathite, Holod Jeffuelles les choles " mêmes opt été formées. Car il paloit parles Phénois " nes de la Name, qu'il y a actuellement de rels Principe quoi qu' on ne punte pas encore en expliquer les Ca " fes. Sometif que enaque espece Williacte des Choses de ... douée de Qualitat occuper Specifiques, prin le moyen de quelles les choles ont certaines karets Actives i logisme, et allies, une telle Doffrine, etch ut in alle in language in language.

> > LEA

caufain Gireftang mongom ande geber bei beiber be-

Parts of Matter may be obliged to follow the Motions and Affections of the Soul, without corporeal Contact; as that pertain Portions of Matter should be obliged to follow each others Motions by the adhesion of Parts, which no Mechanism can account for a or that Rays of Light should restect regularly from a Surface which they + never touch? Of which, Sir Isaac Newton, in this Opticks has given us faveral evident and ocular Experiments.

Nor is it less surprizing, to find this AL fergion again repeated in express Words, that, after the first Creation of Things, | | | 5 115, the dentinuation of the Motions of the bea-116. wanly Bodies, and the Formation of Plants and Animals, and every Mosion of the Bodies hoth of Mon and all other Animals, is eas machanical as the Motions of a Clock. Whoever entertains this Opinion, is (I think) obliged in reason to be able to explain perticularly, by appar Louis of Machanism tho Planets and Comets can continue to move in the Ords they do, three untelling Spaeas and by most mechanical Laws, both Rlants and Animals are formed; and how the infinitely various spontaneous * Matin * see Arens of Animals and Men, are performed pendix, No Which, I am fully perfushed, is no impoliing now a chapment before a storic off of bid

⁺ See Sir Isaac Newton's Opticks, Latin Edition, Pag. 224. Bielift Edition, Book 2, Page 55.

364 Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

se mouvoir dans les Orbes où elles se meupoint de resistance; par quelles Loix Méchaniques les Plantes 80 les Animaux font | Voicz l' former, d'aquelle est la eause des | moui vemens Spontanées des Animaux & des Appendiœ N9 13. Hommes, dont la varieté est presque infinie. Mais je suis fortement persuade, qu' il n' est pas moine impossible d'expliquer toutes ces chofes, qu' il le servit de faire voir que une Maison, ou une Ville, a été bâtit par sid simple Méchanisme, ou que le Monde même a été formé des le commencement sans Auteur réconnoit formellement, que les choses ne pouvoient pas être produites au commencement par un pur Méchanisme. Aprez ret aveu, je ne seaurois comprendre pourquoi il paroit si zelé à bannir Dieu du Gouvernement actuel du Monde, & à soutenir que sa Providente ne consiste que dans un simple Concours (comme on l'appelle,) par lequel toutes les Oréatures ne font que ce qui elles feroient d'elles mêmes par un simple Méchanisme. Enfin, je ne sçaurois concevoir pourquoi l'Autour s' imagine que Dieu est obligé, par su Nature ou par sa Sagesse, de ne rien produire dans Univers, que ce qu' une Machine corporelle peut produire par de simples Loix Méchaniques, aprez qu' elle a été une fois mise en mouvement.

mean to express the Cause of Bodies tending towards each other, but barely the Effect,

Vis à causa aliqua, que penetrat ad usque centra Solis & Planetarum, fine virtueis diminutione; quæque agit non pro quantitate Superficierum particularum in quas agic, (ur solent cause mechanice.) sed pro quantitate materia solida a & cujus actio in immensas distantias undique extenditur, decrescendo semper in duplicata ratione distantiarum. Rationem verb harum Gravitatis proprietatum ex. Phznomenis nondum porui deducere, & Hypotheses non-fingo. Principia Poilos. Schol, generale fub finem. i. c. What the efficient Cause of these Attractions is I do not bere inquire. What I call Attraction, may possibly be caused by some Impulse, or some other way unknown to us. I was the Word Attraction, only In general, to fightfy the Force by which Bodies tend towards each other; whatever be the Gause of that Force. For mo. must first learn from the Phanomena of Nature, what Bodies attract each other, and what are the Laws and Properties of that Attraction, before tis proper to inquire what the efficient ! Cause of Astraction is. Again : I consider these Principles. not as occult Qualities, imagined to artie from the specifick ... Forms of Things; but as Universal Laws of Nathing; according to which the Things themselves were formed. For that such Principles do really exist, appears from the Phanomena of Nature; though, what the Causes of them are, be not yet explained. To affirm that every distinct Species of Things, is indued with specifick occult Qualities, by means whereof the Things have certain Adive Forces; this indeed is saying Nothing. But to deduce from the Phenomena of Nature, two or three general Principles of Motion : and then to explain home the Properties and Actions of all corporeal Things follow from those Principles : This would be a great Progress in Philosophy, though the Causes of those Principles were not yet discovered. Again: I have explained the Phenomena of the Iseavens and the Sea, by the Force of Gravity; but the Cause of Gravity I have not jet affigned. It is a Force arifing from some. Cauje, which reaches to the very Centers of the Sun and Planets, without any diminution of its Force: And it alls, not pro-persionally to the Sartaces of the Particles it alls upon, as Mechanical Gaustes afe to do; but proportionally to the Quantity of Solid Matter: And its Aftion reaches every way to im-mense Distances, decreasing always in a duplicate ratio of the Diffances. Bien the Cante of thefe Properties of Gravity, I have not yet found deducible from Phenomena: And Hypotheses I make not.

pui el pardu plus on du moins dans les véritables Mistacles, o que les Angès pereuent faire de tels Mistacles; ceci, dis-je, est disestement a contraire d ce qu'il d discidentant de la mature du Mistacle dans tous ces Exitant

* Voiez
ci-deflus
le III Ecrit de Mr
Leibnitz,
\$ 17~

- 118 122 Silnous diffont que le Soleil atime la Terre, au pravers d'un Espace ouitles, Ereft'à dire, que la Ferre & le Sokeilisendene Prin vers bindure (quelle que en paisse dits la canse.) nover une Force qui of in proportion directle de leur Mallès ou de leurs Grandeurs on donlitez prifes che samble, so en proponion double inverse de leurs Distances; O que l'Espude qui est enere cust deure Corps, est warde, e ast de dire, que sit in a vien qui indife soufiblement au mogoement des Corps que le travensant s'ioni cila: 1 of qui un Phenomene, ou un Fait actuel, elitoissers par l'Experience. It eff sans doute vrai que ce Phénomene n'est pas produit || sans moyen, c'est à dire, sans une Cause capable de produire un tel esset. Les Philosophes perwent donc recherches cette Caule, & tacber de la détouvrir, fi cela leur ost possible, soit qu' elle soit me chanique ou non méchanique. Mais s'ils ne peuvent pas découvrir cette Cause; s'en suit-il que l'Esset même, ou le Phésipment

4811.5 ∯

*voiez ci- découvert par l'Experience, (car c'est-la dessus is * tout ce que l' on veut dire par les mois, Note sur les mois de Gravitation, Note sur les mois de Gravitation de

117. This learned Author's allowing in this Place, that there is greater and less in true Miracles, and that Angels are capable and ? of working some true Minneles ; is perfectly + contradictiony to that Notion of the See above, Nature of a Mandole, which he has all mizerpire along pleaded for in these Papers. 118 That the Sun stracts. the Earth, through the intermediate void Space that is that the Earth and Sun gravitate towards each other on send (whatever has the Cause of that Tendency) towards each josher, with a Apren which his in a direct proportion of their Maffes, or Megnitudes and Densities together, and in en inverse duplicate proportion of their Di flancer; and substiche Space beawing shem is word, that it, shoth nothing in it which Confibly reliats the Motion of Bodies, pating transverily, through 1. All This, is nothing bys a Phangmentn; or actual Matter sol Fast, found by Experience That this Phaenomenon is not produced & fant mount | 4 its. that is, without fome Caufe capable of producing such same Effect ; is is sundoubtedly true. Philosophers therefore may scarch after and discover That Couse, if they come, be it meebanical, exmet werbanical.. But 82.22 if they cannot discover the Cause; is therefore the Effect it felf, the Phonomenon, or the Matter of Fast discovered by Experience. (which is all that is meant by the 'See aloue, Words Attraction and Granitation,) ever in \$ 113the-

Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke. 1268 dis-je, que ce Phéhomens foie moins ser-tain d'mome incontestable? Une Qualité \$ 122. évidente doit-elle être appellée * occulte, parce que la Cause immédiate en est peret tere occulte, où qu'elle n'est pas encore de-15 123. Couverte d'Liers qu' un Corps + se meut dans un Circle, sant s'éloignes par la Tangunte; il y a cervainement quelque chole, qui l'en émpéches Muis vi dans quelques vas il s. 1 \$ 123. of pas possible | d'expliquer méchanique. moent la Cause de cet Effet, va si elle n'a pas encore l'été découverte, a l'enfute il que le Phénomene fois faux ? Ce feroit une meniere de raisonner fort singuliere. 11 124 130. Le Phonomerie maine, l'Attraction, was Gravitation; on l'effore (quelque vaoin qu'on lui doune) par lequel les Corps tendent l'un vois l'autre ; & les Loix, ou les Proportions; de sette Forer; font affez comines par les Observations & les Experiences. Si Mr. Leibnitz, ou quel que autre Philosophe, peut expliques ces * \$174 Phénomenes par * les Loix du Méchanisme bien loin d'étre contredit; tous les squants Il en remercietont. En attendant , je nie Spauvois m! empecher de dire que !! Auteur raisonne d'une maniere tout à fait extraire † \$ 128. dinaire, en † comparant la Gravitation qui est un Phônomene ou un Fait actuel. zwes la Déclination des Atomes solon la doctrine d'Epicure; lequel dyant corromping thans le dessein d'introduire d'Acheisme, una Philosophie plus ancieme prut être plus saine

the less True? Or is a manifest Quality to be called | occult, because the immediate efficient Cause of it (perhaps) is occult, or not yet discovered? When a Body * moves in a * \$123. Circle, without flying off in the Tangent; its certain there is something that binders it: But if in some Cases it be not mechanically + explicable, or be not yet disco- + \$123. wered, what that something is; does it therefore follow, that the Phanomenon it self is false? This is very singular Arguing indeed.

124-130. The Phanomenon it self. the Attraction, Gravitation, or Tendency of Bodies towards each other, (or whatever other Name you please to call it by;) and the Laws, or Proportions, of that Tendency, are now sufficiently known by Obfervations and Experiments. If This or any other learned Author can by || the Laws of | 6 124 Mechanism explain these Phænomena, he will not only not be contradicted, but will moreover have the abundant Thanks of the Learned World. But, in the mean time, to † compare Gravitation, (which is + \$ 128. a Phanomenon or actual Matter of Fact with Epicurus's Declination of Atoms, (which, according to his corrupt and Atheistical Perversion of some more antient and perhaps better Philosophy, was an Hypo-thesis or Fiction only, and an impossible one B b too

370 Cinquième Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

faine, s' avisa d'établir cette Hypothese, qui n'est qu'une pure Fiction, or qui d' ailleurs est impossible dans un Monde où l' on suppose qu'il n'y a aucune Intelligence.

Pour ce qui est du grand Principe d' une

Raison suffisante, tout ce que le sçavant
Auteur ajoute ici touchant cette matiere, ne
consiste qu' à soûtenir sa Conclusion, sans la
prouver; & par conséquent il n' est pas nécessaire d' y répondre. Je remarquerai seulement que cette Expression est Equivoque;
& qu' on peut l'entendre, comme si elle ne
rensermoit que la Nécessité, ou comme si elle
pouvoit aussi signifier une Volonté & un
Choix. Il est très-certain, & tout le monde
convient, qu' en général * il y a une Raison
suffisante de chaque chose. Mais il s' agit

fuffisante de chaque chose. Mais il s' agit de sçavoir, si, dans certains cas, lors qu'il est raisonnable d'agir, disterentes manieres d'agir possibles ne peuvent pas être également raisonnables; si, dans ces cas, la † voïez d'imple Volonté de Dieu n'est pas une ci-dessis sur si l'est pas une sur s'il maniere plâtôt que d'une autre: est si lors

maniere plûtôt que d'une autre; & si, lors que les raisons les plus fortes se trouvent d'un seul coté, les Agents intelligens & libres n'ont pas un Principe d'action, (en quoi je croi que l'Essence de la Liberté consiste,) tout à fait distinct du Motif ou de la Raison que l'Agent a en vue. Le sçavant Au-

§ 5 20, & teur nie tout cela: Et comme il || établit 125,650. Jon Grand Principe d' une Raison suffisante dans too, in a World where to Intelligence was supposed to be present; leems to be a very extraordinary Method of reasoning.

As to the grand Principle of a * fuffi- * § 129 cient Reason; all that this Learned Writer of here adds concerning it, is only by way of Affirming, not proving, his Conclusion; and therefore needs no Answer. I shall only observe, that the Phrase is of an equivocal Signification; and may either be fo understood, as to mean Necessity only, or so as to include likewise Will and Choice. That in general there || is a sufficient Reason why | \$125. every Thing is, which Is; is undoubtedly true, and agreed on all Hands. But the Question is, whether, in some Cases, when it may be highly reasonable to act, yet different possible Ways of acting may not possibly be equally reasonable; and whether, in such Cases, the * bare Will of *See above; God be not it self a sufficient Reason for on \$ 1-20, acting in this or the other particular manner; and whether in Cases where there are the strongest possible Reasons altogether on One Side, yet in all Intelligent and Free Agents, the Principle of Action (in which I think the Essence of Liberty consists,) be not a distinct Thing from the Motive or Reason which the Agent has in his View. All these are constantly denied by this Learned Writer. And his || laying down || \$ 20, 5 his grand Principle of a fufficient Reason 125, 5 Bb_2

364 Cinquieme Réplique de Mr. Clarke.

sent; au travers d'un Espace qui ne fait point de resistance; par quelles Loix Méchaniques les Plantes & les Animaux font Voicz l' formers, diquelle est la cause des moui remens Spontanees des Animaux & des Appendiœ Nº 13. Mais je suis fortement persuade, qu' il n' est pas moins impossible d'expliquer toutes ces chofer, qu'il le seroit de faire voir que une Maison, ou une Ville, a été bâtite par ill simple Méchanisme, ou que le Monde même a été formé des le commencement sans aucune Caufe Intelligente & Active. L' Anteur recomoit formellement, que les choses ne pouvisient pas être produites au commencement par un pur Méchanisme. Aprez ret aveu, je ne seaurois comprendre pourquoi îl paroit si zelê à bannir Dieu du Gouvernement attuel du Monde, & à soutenir que sa Providente ne consiste que dans un simple Concours (comme on l'appelle,) par lequel toutes les Oréatures ne font que ce que elles feroient d'elles mêmes par un simple Méchanilme. Enfin, je ne sçaurois concevoir pourquoi L'Autour s' imagine que Dieu est obligé, par su Nature un par sa Sagesse, de ne rien produire dans Univers, que co que une Machine corporelle peut produire par de simples Loix Méchaniques, aprez qu' elle a été une fois mise en mouvement.

. Dr. CLABKE's Fifth Reply

ble to make out, as it would be to frow how a House or City could be built or the World it felf have been at first formed by mere: Mechanifu, without any Intelligent and Active Causes ... That Things could not be, at first produced by Muchanismy is ex- 2 111 at prefly allowed: And, when this is once gransed; why, lafter That; fo great Consern should be shown, to exclude God's allud Government of the World, and to allow his Providence to all no further than basely in concurring (as the Phrase is) to let all. Things do only what they would do of themselves by mere. Mechanisma, wand whereit should be thought that God is under any Obligation or Confinement leither in Nature or Wisdom, never to bring about any thing in the Universe, but what is possible for a corporal Marbine to accomplish by mere machanical Laws, after it is once fet a going 3 hagan and way land "ns donce and que e Phin has a solving product | Commission of the direct to ine Carife or the the product our cel of our ins siddle bee peniers . . . richard cate that the latter is a heavenir, to with here of pointing $j \in \mathcal{I}_{j}^{+}$, ever fold to the chanique or nearest control of the Pills कर कुलाहरूपार्थ करह ही हरना राज्य हरका किया है है है यह सुम the il great & them, who I hertone is *voice ? Somewart put "the portion of fore of all life define the tout expending on went the sold for medal Burgape o as Gravina a confidence of $aif_{J^{i,j}}$

... e

11711 Ca que le fiçavant Auteur avour ier, qu' il padu plus on du moins dans les véritables Minacles, & que les Angès penvent faire de tels Miracles; ceci, dirje, of directoment * coritraire à ce qu' it a dis ci-deuant de la nature du Miracle dans tores ces Eccitsu.:

Voïez ci-dessus le III Ecrit de Mr Leibnitz, \$ 17

118 Si nous distat que le So leil atime la Terre, au travers l'un Espace ouiden, Ereft'à dire, que la Ferre & le Sokeinstenden Process brainte (quelle que en paisse dita la conse.) vives une Force qui of in proportion the the der lear Mallety on de leurs Grandeurs en doubtez prifes etc semble, on proposition doubles inverse de leurs Diftanoes; Omque P Blonde qui of entre cui deux Corps, est viside, e est a dire, que un a vice que resiste somiblement au mouvement des Coips soit le travensent s'tout wild at of qui un Phenomene, ou um Pair actuel, discouvers par l' Baperience Il off sans doute vrai que ce Phénomene n'est pas produit || sans moyen, c'est à dire, sans une Cause capable de produire un tel effet. Les Philosophes pervent donc recherches cette Caule, O tacher de la détouvrir, cela leur est possible, soit qu' elle soit me chanique ou non méchanique. Mais s' ils ne peuvent pas découvrir cette Cause; finit-il que l'Effet même, ou le Phientomente *voiez ci- découvert par l'Experience, (car c'est-la dessite * tout ce que l' on veut dire par les mois Noue sur les mois Attraction & de Gravitation, " enfuit-il,

481E.9

Note für

Author's allowing in this Place, that there is greater and less in true Miracles, and that Angels are capable and the of working some vine Minucles ; is perfectly + contradictions ato that Notion of the tsee above. Nature of a Mindole, Which the has all mr. Leibnick Third along pleaded for in these Papers. 118 Lage That the Sun ettracts. the Earth, through the intermediate void Spaces that is the flath and Sun gravitate towards each other or send (whatever has he Cause of that Tendency) rowards each other, with a force which is in a direct proportion of their Masses, or Magnitudes and Densities together, and in an inverse duplicate proportion of their Di Stancer; and what the Space bearing show is wied, that it, but nothing in it which fonfibly relifts the Motion of Bodies passing transverily through 1. All This, is mothing

but a Phanonenon, oc aclassic Matter of Fact, found, by Experience That this Phoenomenon is not produced of fans menting | 118. that is, without fonce Cause capable of prior ducing such an Effect ; is undoubtedly

true. Philosophers therefore may fearth after and discover That Coufe, if they can; be it mechanical, or mot vierbanical. But if they cannot discover the Cause; is there fore the Effect it felf, the Phonomenon, or

the Matter of Fact discovered by Experie

ence, (which is *all that is meant by the *Se above, Words Attractions and Granication,) ever on \$ 113-

the

- Naturellement chaque substance simple a de la perception, & c. Theodicée pag. 479. Sed vis altiva Altum quendam five ernagan continet, at que inter facultatem agendi actionemque ipsam media est, & conatum involvit, atque ita per se ipsam in operationem sertur; nec auxiliis indiget, sed sola sublatione impedi-Quod Exemplis, Gravis-suspensi funem suffinentem intendentis, aut Arcustensi, illustrari potest. Etsi enim gravitas aut vis elastica mechanice explicari possint debeantque ex atheris motu; ultima tamen ratio motûs in materia, est vis in creatione impressa; qua in unoquoque corpore inest, sed ipso conflictu corporum varie in natura limitatur & ceercetur. Et hanc agendi virtuiem omni substantia inesse aio, semperque aliquam ex ea actionem nasci; adeogue nec ipsam substantiam Corpoream, (non magis quam spiritualem) ab agendo cessare unquam. Quad illi non satis percepisse videntur, qui Essentiam ejus in sola extensione, vel etiam impenetrabilitate collocaverunt, corpus omnimode quiescens concipere sibi sunt Apparebit etiam ex nostris meditationibus. Substantiam creatam ab alia Substantia creata non ipsam vim agendi, sed præexistentis jam nisûs Jui, sive virtutis agendi, limites tantummodo ac determinationem accipere. Acta Erudit. Ann. 1694, pag. 112.

Agere, est character substantiarum. Ibid. ad Ann. 1695. pag. 145.

Que [vis activa primitiva] in omni substantia corporea per se inest, cum corpus omnimode quiescens Actions. Naturally, every simple Substance. has Perception, &c. Theodic. pag. 479.

But Active Force contains a certain Act or Efficacy, and is fomething of a middle nature between the Faculty of acting and Action itself: It involves a Conatus or Indeavour, and is of it. felf carried towards Action; and stands in need of no Helps, but only that the Impediment be taken away. This may be illustrated by the Examples of a Heavy Body stretching the string it is hung by, and of a Bow bent. For though Gravity or Elasticity may and ought to be explained mechanically by the Motion of Æther; vet the ultimate Caufe of Motion in Matter, is a Force impressed at the Creation: Which is in every part of matter, but, according to the course of nature, is variously limited and re-Arained by Bodies Striking against each other. And this active Faculty I affirm to be in Ale. Substance, and that some action is always affine from it: So that not even corporeal Substance, any more than Spiritual, ever ceases alling. Which feems not to have been apprehended by Those, who have placed the Essence of Matter in Extension alone, or even in Impenetrabi-'hty; and fancied they could conceive a Body abfolutely at Rest. It will appear also from what I have advanced, that One created Substance does not receive from Another the active Force it felf, but only the Limits and Determination of the Indeavour or Affive Faculty already pre-existing in it. Ada Erud. Ann. 1694, Pag. 112.

To All, is the Characteristick of Substances.

Ibid. ad Ann. 1695, Pag. 145.

Which primitive active Power, is of it self in All corporeal Substance: For, I think, a Body absolutely

escent, à rerum nesure abhorrere arbitrer. Ihid: pag. 146.

Oh forman, corpus omne samper agere. Ibid.

DAR 147:

Potentia scilicat aftricis in sormé, & ignavia od motum resisentia in materia.

pag. 151.

Eff principium activum materialibus notionibus superius. & (ut sec dicam) vivale, whiches in corporibus admittam. Ibid. pag. 153.

Alibi à me explicatum est, etse nandum fortalle fatis perspettum omnibus; iplam rerum substantiam in agendi patiendique vi confistere. Ibid. ad Ann. 1698, Pag. 432.

Its ut non taxtum owne quod agit, fit Subfantis singularis, sed etiam ut omnis singularis Subfantia agat fine intermissione; corpore ipso non excepto, in quo nulla unquam quies absoluta re-

peritur. Ibid.

Quod si vere menti nostra vim instam tribuimus, actiones immanentes producendi, vel, quod idem est, agendi immanenter; jam nibil probibet, imò consentaneum est, eliis animabus vel formis, aut, si mavis, naturis Substantiarum eandem vim inesse: Nise quis solas in natura rerum nobis obvid Mentes nostras activas esse; aut omnem vim agendi immanenter, atque adeo vitaliter, ut sic dieam, cum intellectu effe conjunctum arbitretur: Quales certà Asseverationes neque ratione wile confirmantur, nec nisi invita veritate propuenantur. Ibid. Pag. 433.

absolutely at Rest, is inconsistent with the Nature of Things. Ibid. Pag. 146.

Every Part of Matter is, by its Form, conti-

mually Acting. Ibid. Pag. 147.

The Adire Power, which is in the Form; and the inertie, or repugnance to Motion, which is in the Matter. Ibid. Pag. 151.

Though I admit every where in Bodies, a Principle superior to the [common] Notion of Matter; a Principle Active, and (if I may so

speak,) Vital. Ibid. Pag. 153.

I have elsewhere explained, though it is a Thing perhaps not yet well understood by All; that the very Substance of Things, consists in the Power of Asing and being Asied upon. Ihid. ad Ann. 1698. Prg. 432.

So that, not only every Thing which after, is a fingle Substance; but also every fingle Substance does perpetually aft: Not excepting even Matter it self; in which there never is any Absolute

Rest. Ibid.

. If we ascribe to our own Minds an intrinsick Power of producing immanent Actions, or (which is the same Thing) of Acting immanently: "Tis no way unreasonable, nay tis very reasonable, to allow that there is the same Power in other Souls or Forms, or (if that he a better Expression,) in the Natures of Substances. Unless a Man will imagine, that, in the whole Extent of Nature within the compals of our Knowledge, our own Minds are the only Things endued with Allive Powers; or that All Power of acting immanantly and vitally (if I may so speak,) is connected with Understanding. Which Kind of Affertions, certainly, are neither founded on any Reason; nor can be maintained, but in oppolition to Truth. Ibid. Pag. 433.

Hinc judicari potest, debere in corporea Substantia reperiri entelechiam primam, tanquam repriri dunniò activitatis; vim scilicet motricem primitivam, que preter extensionem (seu id quod est merè Geometricum) & preter molem (seu id quod est mere materiale) superaddita, semper quidem agit, sed tamen varie ex corporum concursibus per conatus impetusve modificatur. Atque hoc ipsum Substantiale principium est, quod in viventibus anitma, in aliis forma Substantialis appellatur. Ibid. Pag. 434.

Primam [materiam] esse merè passivam, sed non esse completam Substantiam; accedereque adeò debere animam vel sorman Anima analogam, sive correcte au non recion, id est, nisum quendam seu vim agendi primitivam, que ipse est. Lex insita, decreto divino impressa. A qua sententia non puto abhorrere Virum celebrem: imgeniosum, qui nuper desendit, Corpus constare ex Materia & Spiritu; modò sumatur Spiritus non pro re intelligente (ut alias solet,) sed pro Anima vel sorma Anima analoga; nec pro simplici modificatione, sed pro constitutivo Substantiali perseverante, quod Monadis nomine appellare soleo, in quo est velut Perceptio & appetitus. Ibid. Pag. 435.

Contrà potius arbitror, neque ordini neque pulchritudini rationive rerum esse consentaneum, ut vitale aliquid, seu immanenter agens, sit in exigua tantum parte materix; cùm ad majorem persectionem pertineat, ut sit in omni; neq; quicquam obstet, quo minus ubiq; sint Anima, aut analoga saltem Animabus; etsi dominantes Anima

Hence we may gather, that there must needs be in corporeal Substance an original Efficacy, or (as it were) prime Recipient of Active Force: That is, there must be in it a primitive Motive Power: Which being added over and above the Extension (or that which is merely geometrical.) and over and above the Bulk (or that which is merely material;) alts indeed continually, but yet is variously modified by the Conatus's and Impetus's of Bodies striking against each other. And This is That Substantial Principle, which, in Living Substances, is stilled Soul; in Others, the Substantial Form. Ibid. Pag. 434.

The materia prima is indeed merely passive, but 'tis not a complete Substance. To make it complete Substance, there must be moreover a Soul, or a Form analogous to Soul, or an original Efficacy, that is, a certain Indeavour, or Primitrue Power of Acting, which is an innate Law, impressed by the Decree of God. Which Opinion I think is not different from that of an Eminent and Ingenious Gentleman, who has lately maintained, that Body confilts of Matter and Spirit; meaning by the word Spirit, not (as ufually) an intelligent thing, but a Soul or Form analogous to Soul; and not a simple Modification, but a substantial Permanent Constituent, which I used to call a Monad, in which is as it were Perception and Desire. Ibid. pag. 435.

On the contrary, I am rather of opinion, that 'tis neither agreeable to the Order, nor Beauty. nor Reason of things, that there should be a Vital Principle or Power of acting immanently, only in a very small part of Matter; when it would be an argument of greater Perfection, for it to be in All matter; and nothing hinders but

mz, atque adeo intelligentes, quales funt humanz, ubique esse non possint. Ibid. Pag. 436.

Cum id quod non agit, quod vi activa caret, quod discriminibilitate, quod denique omni subsistendi ratione ac fundamento spoliatur; substantia esse nullo modo possi. Ibid. Pag. 439.

Voiez cy-dessous, No 11.

Nº 3.

Il [Monfieur Bayle] fait voir asses amplement (Rep. au Provincial, ch. 139, p. 748, seqq.) qu'on peut comparer l'ame à une Balance, où les Raisons & les Inclinations tiennent lieu de poids; & selon luy, on peut expliquer ce qui se passe dans nos resolutions, par l'Hypothese, que la volonté de l'Homme est comme une Balance, qui se tient en repos, quand les poids de ses deux bassens sont égaux; & qui panche toujours où d'un coté ou de l'autre, selon que l'un des bassens est plus chargé. Une nouvelle Raison fait un poids superieur; une nouvelle Raison fait un poids superieur; une nouvelle Idée rayonne plus vivoement que la vieille; la crainte d'une grosse peine, s'emporte sur quelque plaisir; quand deux passons se disputent le terrein, c'est toujours la plus forte qui demeure la Muirresse, à moins que l'autre ne soit aidée par la Raison, où par quelque autre passon combinée. Theodicée, Pag. 514.

L'on a d'autant plus de peine à se determiner, que les Raisons opposées approchent plus de

that there may Everywhere be Souls, or at least Something analogous to Souls; though Souls indued with Dominion and Understanding, such as are Humane Souls, cannot be Everywhere. Ibid. pag. 436.

What doth not all, what wants Allive Power, what is void of Discernibility, what wants the whole ground and foundation of Subsistence; can no way be a Substance. Ibid. pag. 439.

See below, No 11.

Nº 3.

Mr. Bayle has shown at large (in his Answer to a Provincial, ch. 139, p. 748 Et.) that a Mans Soul may be compared to a Balance. wherein Reasons and Inclinations are in the place of Weights: And, according to Him; the manner of our forming our refolutions may be explained by This Hypothesis, that the Will of Man is like a Balance, which stands always unmoved when the Weights in Both Scales are equal, and always turns on one fide or the other, in proportion as One Scale has more Weight in it than the Other. A New Reafon, makes an Overpoise of Weight. A new Idea Strikes the Mind more vigorously than a foregoing one. The Fear of a Great Pain, determines more strongly than the expectation of a Pleasure. When Two Pallions contend against each other. the stronger always remains Master of the Field. unless the Other be affilted either by Reason. or by some other passion conspiring with it. Theodic. pag. 514.

A Man has always so much the more difficulty of determining himself, as the opposite

Reasons

l'égalité, comme l'on von que la Balance se determine plus promtement, lors qu'il y a une grande différence entre les poids. Cependant; comme bien souvent il y a pluseurs partis à prendre, on pourroit, au lieu de la Balance, comparer l'ame avec une force, qui fait effort en même tems de plusieurs cotés, mais qui n'agit que là où elle trouve le plus de facilité, ou le moins de resistance. Par Exemple, l'air étant comprimé trop fortement dans un Recipient de verre, le cassera pour sortir. Il fait effort sur chaque partie, mais il se jette ensin sur la plus foible. C'est ainsi que les Inclinations de l'ame vont sur tous les biens qui se presentent; ce sont eur tous les biens qui se presentent; ce sont equente, qui en est le resultat, se determine vers ce qui touche le plus. Theodicée, Pag. 515. Voiez cy-dessous. N° 4 & 9.

Nº 4

Il n'y a jamais d' indifference d'équilibre, c'est à dire, où tout soit parsaitement égal de part & d'autre, sans qu', il y ait plus d'Inclination vers un côté. Theodicée, Pag. 158.

Il est vray, si le cas [de l' âne entre deux préz, également porté à l' un & à l' autre,] étoit possible, qu' il faudroit dire qu' il se laisseroit mourir de saim: Mais dans le sond la Question est sur l'impossible, à moins que Dieu ne produise la chose exprés. Ibid. Pag, 161,

Voiez ci-dessus, Nº 3 3 & ci-dessous, Nº 9.

Nº 5.

Reasons draw nearer to an equality: Just as we see a Balance turn so much the more readily, as the Weights in each Scale are more different from one another. However, fince there are often more than two ways which a Man may take; we may therefore, instead of This similitude of a Balance, compare the Soul to a Force. which has at one and the same time a Tendency many ways, but acts on That part only where it finds the Greatest Ease, or the Least Resistence. For example: Air strongly compressed in a Glass-Receiver, will break the Glass to get out. It presses upon every part, but at last makes its way where the Glass is weakest. Thus the Inclinations of the Soul, tend towards All apparent Goods: And these are the antecedent Volitions: But the Confequent Volition, which is the last Result, determines itself towards That Good which affects us the most strongly. Ibid. pag. 515. See below, No 4 and 9.

Nº 41

There is never any such thing as an Indisference in aquilibrio; that is, such an one, where every circumstance is perfectly equal on Both sides, so that there is no inclination to one side rather than the other. Theodicaa, pag. 158.

"Tis True, if the Case of the As standing between Two green Fields, and equally liking Both of them] was possible, we must say he would suffer himself to be starved to Death. But at the bottom, the Case is impossible to happen; unless God should order circumstances so on Purpose. Ibid. pag. 161.

See above, No 3; and below, No 9.

No: 5.

C'est une suire du Système de l' Harmonie préchablie, dom il est macessaire de donner quelque explication icy. Les Philosophes de l' Ecole eroyorent, qu' il y deoit une influence phy-fique reciproque entre le corps & Pame: Mais depuis qu' on a bien confidere que la pensee & la masse étendue n'ent aucune liuison ensemble, E que ce sont des creatures qui différent toto genere, plusieurs modernes ont reconnu, que il n'y a aucune communication physique entre l' ame & le corps, quoique la communication Metaphysique subsiste toujours, qui fait que l'ame El le corps composent un même suppost, ou ce qu' on appelle une personne. Cette communication physique, s' il y en avoit, feroit que l'aine changeroit le degré de la vitesse & la ligne de direction de quelques mouvemens qui sont dans le corps; & que, vice versa, le corps changeroit la suite des pensées qui sont dans l'arne. Mais en ne sauroit tirer cet effet d'aucune notion qu' on consoive dans le corps, & dans l' ame : quoique rien ne nous soit mieux comme que l'ame, puisqu' elle nous est intime, & est à dire intime à elle même. Theodicee, pag. 172.

Nº 5:

This is a Consequence of my System of a pre-established Harmony; which it may be necellary here to give some Account of. Scholastick Philosophers were of Opinion, that the Soul and Body mutually affected each other by a-Natural Influence: But fince it has been well confidered, that * Thought and extended Subfance have no Connexion with each other, and are Beings that differ toto genere; many modern Philosophers have acknowledged, that there is no physical Communication between the Soul and the Body, though a Metaphysical Communication there always is, by means of which the Soul and the Body make up one Suppositum, or what we call a Person. If there was any physical Communication between them, then the Soul could change the Degree of Swiftness, and the Line of Direction of certain Motions in the Body; and, on the other side, the Body could cause a Change in the Series of Thoughts which are in the Soul. But now, such an Effect as this, cannot be deduced from the Notion of any thing we can conceive in the Body and Soul; though nothing be better known to us † than the Soul, because tis intimate to Us, that is, to itfelf. Theodicaa, Pag. 172.

Cc 2

I can-

^{*} The Thinking Substance, he should have said: For Thought, or the Act of Thinking, is not a Substance.

[†] Note. As the Eye sees not itself; and if a Man had never seen Another's Eye, nor the Image of his own in a Gluss, he could never have had Any Notion what an Eye is: So the Soul discerns not its own Substance.

APPENDICE.

Je ne pouvois manquer de venir à ce système. qui porte que Dieu a créé l'ame d'abord de telle façon, qu'elle doit se produire & se represemer par ordre ce qui se passe dans le corps; & le corps aussi de telle façon, qu' il doit faire de soi même ce que l'ame ordonne. De forte que les loix, qui lient les pensées de l'ame dans l'ordre des caufes finales, & suivant l'évolution des perceptions, doivent produire des images qui se rencontrem & s'accordent avec les impressions des corps sur nos organes; & que les loix des mouvemens dans le corps, qui s' entresuivent dans l'ordre des causes efficientes, se rencontrent aussi & s accordent tellement avec les pensées de l'ame, que le corps est porté à agir dans le tems que l' ame le veut. Ibid. Pag. 176.

Monsieur Jaquelot a trés bien montre dans son Livre de la conformité de la Raison & de la Roy, que c'est comme si celui qui sait tout ce que ordonnerai à un valet le lendemain tout le lone du jour, faisoit un Automate qui ressemblat parfaitement à ce valet, & qui executat demain à point nomme, tout ce que j'ordonnerois; Ce qui ne m' empecheroit pas d' ordonner librement tout ce qui me plairoit, quoique l'action de l'Acatomate qui me serviroit, ne tiendroit rien du libre. Ibid. pag. 176.

Le vray moyen, par lequel Dieu fait que l' ame a des sentimens de ce qui se passe dans le corps, vient de la nature de l'ame, qui eff representative des corps, & faite en sorte par avance, 946

I cannot help coming into this Notion, that God created the Soul in such manner at first, as that it produces within it self, and represents in it self successively, what passes in the Body; and that he has made the Body also in such manner, as that it must of it self do what the Soul wills. So that the Laws which make the Thoughts of the Soul follow each other successively in the Order of final Causes, and in the Order of its Percoprious arising within it felf; must produce Images, which shall be coincident, and go Hand in Hand with the Impressions made by Bodies upon our Organs of Sense: And the Laws by which the Motions of the Body follow each other successively in the Order of efficient Causes. are likewise coincident and go Hand in Hand with the Thoughts of the Soul, in fuch manner as that these Laws of Motion make the Body act at the same Time that the Soul Wills. Ibid. Pag. 176.

ķ

Mr. Jaquelot has very well shown, in his-Book concerning the Agreement of Reason and Fath, that this is just as if One who knew before-hand every particular thing that I should order my Footman to do to Morrow all the Day long, should make a Machine to resemble my Footman exactly, and punctually to perform all Day to Morrow every Thing I directed, Which would not at all hinder my freely ordering whatever I pleased, though the Actions of my Machine-Footman had no Liberty at all. Ihid. Pag. 176.

The true Means by which God causes the Soul to have a Perception of what passes in the Body, is This; that he has made the Nature of the Soul to be Representative of Bodies, and to

Cc 3

que les representations, qui naîtront en elle les unes des auties par une suité naturelle de prasées, répondent au changement des corps. Ibid. Pag. 550.

Voiez cy-dessus, Nº 2; & cy-dessous Nº 11.

Nº 6.

Et de même, si Dieu vouloit que les organes des corps humains se conformassent avec les volontés de l'ame, suivant le système des causes occasionelles, cette loy ne s'executeroit auss, que par des miracles perpetuels. Theodicée, Pag. 383. Voiez cy-dessous, N° 8.

Nº 7.

Imò potius materiam resistere motui, per quandam suam inertiam naturalem, à Keplero pluchrè sir denominatam; ita ut non sit indifferens ad motum & quietem, uti vulgò rem assimare solent, sed ad motum, pro magnitudine suas vi tamo majore astivà indigeat. Acta Erudit ati Ann. 1698. pag. 434.

Inertiam naturalem, oppositam motui- Ibid.

Ignavia quadam, ut sie dicam; id est, ad Motum repugnatione. Acta ad Ann. 1695, Pag. 147.

Ignaviz, seu ad Motum resistentiz, in mate-

ria. Ibid. Pag. 151.

Les Experiences auss du choe des corps, jointes à la raison, sont voir qu'il saux employer, deux sois plus de sorce pour donner une même un telle

be before hand to constituted, as that the Repres fentations which shall arise in it, one following another according to the natural Succession of Thoughts shall be coincident with such Change as happens in Bodies. Ibid, Pag. 550.

See above, No 2; and below, No 11.

Nº 6.

In like manner, should it be the Will of God. that the Organs of human Bodies should move conformably to the Volitions of the Soul; confidering those Volitions as occasional Causes; such a Law could not be put in Execution, but by perpetual Miracles. Theodicaa, Pag. 383.

See below, No 8.

. Nº 7.

Nay rather, Matter refests Motion, by a certain natural Inertia, very properly so stilled by Kepler: So that Matter is not indifferent to Motion and Rest, as is vulgarly supposed; but needs a greater active Force, in proportion to the Magnitude of the Body, to put it in Motion. Atta Erudit. ad Ann 1698, Pag. 434.

A Natural Inertia, repugnant to Alation.

Ibid.

A certain Sluggishness, if I may so speak, that is, a repugnancy to Motion. Acta Erndit. ad Ann. 1695, Pag. 147.

A Sluggishness, or Resistence to Motion, in Bid. Pag. 151.

The Experiments of Bodies striking against each other, as well as Reason, show that twice as much Force is required to give the same Ve-Cc4

tesse à un corps de la même matière : muit detocifeis plus grand: Ce qui ne service prime nécessifiere, si la matière était absolument indifferente an repos & au monvement, O se elle se arain parler, qui lui donne une espece de repugnances à être mûe. Theodicée. Pag. 142.

a être mûe. Theodicée. Pag. 142.

Il semble, en considerant l'indifference de lab
matiere au mouvement & au repos, que le placif
grand corps en repos paurrait être emporté sansue
aucune resistance par le moindre corps qui servivi
en mouvement; au quel cas il y auroit atton sans
reattion, & un effet plus grand que sa cause.
Ibid. Pag. 538.

Nº 8.

C'est pourquoy, si Dieu faisoit une loy generale, qui portat que les corps s'attirassent les uns les autres; il n'en sauroit obtenir l'execution, que par des miracles perpetuels. Theodicée, Pag. 382.

Voiez cy-dessus, Nº 6.

N° 9.

On peut dine de même en matiere de parfaitais sagesse, qui n'est pas moins reglée que les Maistematiques; que s'il n'y avoit pas le Meilleur (Optimum) parmi tous les mondes possibles. Dieu n'en auroit produit aucun. Theodicée, pag. 116.

Voiez cy-dessus, No 4 & 3.

To be Manual to the second

locity to a Body of the same Kind of Matter, double in Bigness. Which would not be needful, if Matter was absolutely indifferent to Rest and Motion, and had not that natural Inertia I spoke of, which gives it a sort of Repugnancy to Mation. Theodicea, Pag. 142.

It might be expected, supposing Matter indifferent to Motion and Rest, that the largest Body at Rest, might be carried away without any Resistence, by the least Body in Motion. In which Case, there would be Action without Reaction, and an Effect greater than its Cause.

Ibid. Pag. 538.

f

ĭ

į

ş

į

Nº. 8.

Wherefore if God made a general Law, that Bodies should Astrail each other; it could not be put in Execution, but by perpetual Miracles. Theodicaa, Pag. 382.

See above. No 6.

Nº 9.

The same may be said concerning perfect Wisdom, (which is no less regular than Mathematicks,) that if there was not a Best among all the Worlds that were possible to have been made, God would not have made Any at all, Theadicea, Pag. 116.

See above, No 4, and 3.

Nº 10

^{*} Noce. The Author did not consider, that twice as much force is requisite likewise to stop the same Velocity in a Body of the same Kind of Matter, double in Bigness.

off to have a tell to a

Nº 10.

Stifugeremus duas spheras concentious persettas, & persetto som inter se quim in partibus suis similares, alteram alteri ita inclussam
esse, ut nec minimus se hiatus; tune, seve univi
inclussam, sive quiescere ponamus, ne Angelus
quidem, ne quid amplius dicam, ullum poterie notare discrimen inter diverse temporis saus
indicium habere discernendi utrum quiescat un
volvatur inclusa sphera, & qua motus leges
Acta Erudit, ad Ann. 1698, pag. 437.

Nº 11

If y [dans le système de l'Harmonie prédiablie] fais voir, que naturellement chaque substance simple a de la perception, & que son individualité consiste dans la loy perpetuelle que sais la suite des perceptions qui lui sont affectéeq, & qui naisseut naturellement les unes des autres, pour représenter le corps qui lui est assent le point de veue propre à cette substance simple, sans que elle ait besoin de recevoir aucune influence physsique du Corps: Comme le Corps aussi de son ééré, s'accommode aux volantés de l'ame par ses prespiés loix, & par consequent ne lui obéis, ne autant que ces loix le partent. Thodicis pag. 479.

Aust

Nº 10.

If we imagine two perfect Spheres concentrical, and perfectly fimilar both in the Whole and in every Part, to be inclosed one in the other, so as that there shall not be the least Interstice between them; then, whether the inclosed Sphere be supposed to revolve, or to continue at Rest; an Angel himself (not to say more) could discover no difference between the State of these Globes at different Times, nor find Any Way of discerning whether the inclosed Globe continued at Rest, or turned about; or with what Law of Motion it turned. Assa Erudic. ad Ann. 1698. Pag. 437.

Nº il.

In my Doctrine of a pre established Harmony, I show, that every single Substance is naturally indued with Perception; and that its Individuality consists in that perpetual Law, which causes its appointed Succession of Perceptions, arising naturally in order one from another, so as to represent to it its own Body, and, by the same Means, the Whole Universe, according to the Point of View proper to that single Substance; without its needing to receive any physical Insurance from the Body. And the Body likewise, on the Part, acts correspondently to the Volitions of the Soul, by its own proper Laws; and consequently does not obey the Soul, any otherwise than as those Laws are correspondent. Theodifea. Pag. 479.

Aust faut-il avouer, que chaque ame se represente l'Univers suivant son point de vue, & par un rapport qui luy est propre, mais une parfaite harmonie y subsisse toujours. Ibid. Pag. 532.

L' operation des Automates spirituels, c'est à dire des Ames, n'est point mecanique; mais elle contient éminemment ce qu'il y a de beau dans la Mecanique; les mouvemens, developpés dans les corps, y étant concentrés par la tepresentation, comme dans un monde Ideal, qui exprime les bios du monde actuel & leurs suites; avec cotte difference du monde ideal parfait qui est en Dieu, que la plapart des perceptions dans les autres no font que consuses. Car il faut savoir que toute Substance simple enveloppe l'Univers par ses perceptions confuses ou sentimens. & que la suite des ces perceptions est reglée par la nature particuliere de cette substance; mais d'une maniere qui exprime todjours toute la nature universelle: E toute perception presente, tend à une perception nouvelle, comme tout mouvement qu' elle represente; tend à un autre mouvement. Mais il est impossible que l'ame puisse connoitre distinctement toute sa nature, & s'appercevoir comment ce nombre innombrable de petites perceptions entaffées, ou plutôt concentrées ensemble, s'y forme: Il faudroit pour cela qu' elle connat perfaitement tout l'Univers qui y est enveloppé, c' est à dire, qu' elle fût un Dieu. Ihid. pag. 603. Voiez cy-dessus, No 2 & 5.

It must also be confessed, that every Soul represents to it self the Universe, according to its Point of View, and by a Relation peculiar to it: But there is always a persect Harmony between them. Wid. Pag. 552.

The Operation of Spiritual Machines, that is, of Souls is not mechanical; but it contains eminently, whatever is excellent in Mechanism's the Motions which appear actually in Bodies. being concentred by representation in the Soul. as in an Ideal World, which represents the Laws of the Actual World, and the Series of their being out in Execution, differing in This from the Perfect Ideal World which is in God, that most of the Perceptions in Human Souls are but confused. For we must know, that every fingle Substance includes the Universe in its indistinct Perceptions; and that the Succession of these Perceptions is regulated by the particular Nature of the Substance; but yet in a manner which always represents. Whole Universal Nature. And every present Perception tends towards a new Perception; as every Motion. which such Perception represents, tends towards a new Motion. But 'tis impossible the Soul should be able to understand distinctly its own whole Nature, and to apprehend how this numberless Number of little Perceptions, heaped up. or rather concentred together, are produced. In order to This, it would be requifite that the Soul understood perfectly the whole Universe, which is included within it; that is, it must be a God. Ibid. Pag. 603.

Nº 12.

L'enchainement des causes liéées les unes avec les autres, va loin. C'est pourquoi la raison que M. Descartes a alleguée, pour prouver l'independance de nos assions tibres par un presendu sentiment vis interne, n'a point de forse. Nous ne pouvons pas semir proprement nôtre independance; E' nous ne nous appercevons, pas sousjours des causes, souvent imperceptibles, dont nôtre resolution depend. C'est comme se l'éguille aimantée prenoit plaisir de se tourner vers le Nord; car elle croiroit tourner independamment de quelque autre cause, ne s'appercevant pas des mouvemens insensibles de la matière magnetique. Theodicée pag. 162.

Voiez cy-dessous, Nº 13.

Nº 13.

Une infinité de grands & de petits mouvemens internes & externes consourent avec nous, dont le plus souvent l'on ne s'apperçoit pas ; B'j' ai déja dit, que lors qu' on sort d'une chambre, il y a telles raisons qui nous determinent à mettre un tel pied devant, sans qu' on y restechisse. Theodicée pag. 158. Voiez cy-dessus, N° 12.

Nº 12.

The Chain of Causes connected one with another, reaches very far. Wherefore the Reason alledged by Des Cartes, to prove by a pretended vigorous inward Sense, the independence of our Rice Actions; is altogether inconclusive. We cannot, strictly speaking, be sensible of our not depending on other Causes: For we cannot always perceive the Causes, (they being often insperceptible,) on which our Resolutions depend. Tis as if a Needle touched with a Loadstone, was sensible of, and pleased with its turning towards the North. For it would believe that it turned it self, independently on any other Cause; not perceiving the insensible Motions of the Magnetick Matter. Theodicae, Pag. 162.

See below, No 13.

Nº 13.

An infinite Number of Great and Small Motions Internal and External, concur with us, which generally we are not sensible of. And I have already said, that, when a Man walks out of a Room, there are such reasons which determine him to set One Foot sorward rather than the other, though he observes it not. Theodicaa, Pag. 158.

See above, Nº 12.

...

ļ

· ·

.

LETTERS

T O

$\mathbf{Dr.}CLARKE$

CONCERNING

Liberty and Necessity;

FROM A

Gentleman of the University of CAMBRIDGE;

WITH

The Doctor's Answers to them.



LONDON:
Printed in the Year, MDCC XVII.



:



The state of the s

THE

First L E T T E R.

Reverend S I R. ~ Jan. 1. 1716. Me Have no other pretense to trouble you on this occasion, but That Right which all Mankind may plead to the Instructions of a Great and Good Man. The finall share of time I have spent in Study, has been employ'd in examining the fundamental Principles of Reason and Philosophy. In this pursuit I must have been absolutely blind, if your Discourse on the Being and Attributes of God had escap'd me; in which your account of Li-berry and Necessity has silenc'd a great many Difficulties, which perplex'd me very much. But I have One still remaining on my Mind, which I could wish to get rid of; and therefore beg your Affistance. I see plainly, Man is not over-rul'd by any blind Impulse: But, that every Volition is not necessary, this I cannot fee. 'Tis allow'd, that the Will is no other but the last Judgment of the Understanding. It will likewise, I suppose, be granted, that the Last Judgment of the Understanding affenting to or diffenting from any Speculative Proposition, is necessary. My enquiry then is, Why the last Judgement of the Understanding assenting to or dissenting from any Practical proposition (by which the Man is determin'd to act,) should not be equally necesfary: And also, whether such a Necessary be not, in all its Consequences and Effects, (tho' not

in

in its foundation,) the very same which the Farafists maintain. To give an Instance: A Man Judges it better to confult his present Ease. than to wait for the greatest Happiness in Reversion. Does he' not then Aft by the same ·Nocessay, by which Another Man Judges the Contrary to be more Eligible? or, to speak more properly, by the same Necessary by which a Mathematician Judges that a Triangle is one half of a Square on the same Base and between the same Parallels? To pursue this Matter a little farther: God is absolutely perfect; He Judges then, in every Instance. That to be best (i. e. Wills That,) which in Nature and Reality is best: He is therefore necessarily Good and Just. Every Man is Impertest; He judges then in many instances That to be best, (i.e. Wills That,) which in Nature and Reality & not best: Every Man therefore is by necessity imperfectly Good and Jult; and That, according to their several Degrees of lamperfection. How is any Creature then accountable for the Want of that Perfection which God never gave it, neither was it in its Power to give itself? Thus, Sir, I have open'd my Opinion, as clearly and fully as I could; which will, I hope, fave you some Trouble. And now, when I look back, 'I cannot but suspect that I am got into a very odd train of Thoughts: And yet, when I take a survey of my Ideas on all sides, I am at a Loss how or where the Delusion could creep in. If you condefcend to answer my Letter, I fhall receive it with the Reverence and Esteem due to so great a Character, and for ever think my felf

Your Most Obliged Humble Servant, &c.

THE

THE

Answer to the First LETTER.

Jan. 3d, 1715

SIR,

ITOU have put the Argument against Liberty, more short and strong than I have usually seen it. The True Answer to it, I think. is This. So far as any thing is Passive, so far tis subject to Necessity; so far as 'tis an Agent, so far 'ris Free: For Adion and Freedom are, I think, perfectly Identical Ideas. To explain this, in the Instance you alledge. Truth and Good are to the Understanding, what a Luminous Object is to the Eye. The Eye, when open, sees the Object necessarily, because 'tis passive in so doing. Understanding likewise, when open, perceives the Truth of a speculative Proposition, or the Reafonableness of a Pradical Proposition, necessarily; because the Understanding also is passive in so doing. Only, as a Man by the Action of shutting his Eyes, may avoid feeing; so by the Action of withdrawing his Attention, he may But allowing the last avoid understanding. Fudgment of the Understanding to be always necessary, as indeed I think it is; yet What follows from thence? Fudging, is one thing; and Alling, is another. They depend upon Principles totally different from each other, and which have no more connexion than Adiveness and Passiveness. Neither God nor Man can avoid seeing That to be True, which they see is True; or judging That to be Fit and Reasonable, which Dd 2 they

5 55. ()

they see is Fit and Reasonable. But in All this, there is no Action; any more than Gods being Omnipresent, (which depends not on his Will,) can be faid to be a Divine Att. The physical Power of Acting, (which, both in God and Man, is the Essence of Liberty,) continues exactly the fame after the last Judgment of the Understanding, as before. For example: It appears from several Promises (suppose,) that 'tis at this Instant the last Judgment of the Divine Understanding, that 'tis not reasonable the world should be destroyed This day. Does it follow from thence, that God's physical Power of destroying it, is not exactly the same This day, as it will be at any time hereafter? And is it not evident, that the necessary by which God is Omnipresent or Omniscient, and the necessity by which he keeps bis Pranise, are things that have no similitude but in Name; the one being nasural and literal, the other merely figurative and meral? The Summ is: There is no Connexion between Approbation and Action; between what is Passive, and what is Astive. The Spring of Adion, is not the Understanding: For a Being incapable of Action, might never-theless be capable of Perception: But the Spring of Astion, is The Self-Motive Power, which is (in All Animals) Spontaneity, and (in rational ones) what we call Liberty. All Errour in this Matter, has (I think) arisen from Mens using the word, Will, in a confused Sense, to express (indistinctly) partly what is Passive, and partly what is Active.

I am, Sir, &c.

THE

Second LETTER.

Fan. 6th, 1715.

Reverend SIR.

Shall detain you no longer, than to acknowledge your great Favour, and proceed to offer my Reasons, why I cannot apprehend how your Argument fatisfies the Difficulty. first it will be of use, to settle my Notion of Necessay. Thus therefore: When in any given Circumstance it is a Contradiction to Suppose any Being, Mode, or Action, to have been other wife than it actually is; That Being, Mode, or Action, is in That Instance necessary, absolutely and properly freaking. To apply this to the Question before us, viz. Whether Human Actions are strictly and properly necessary. The last Judgment of the Understanding, is granted necessary in every Instance of Volition; Every Action therefore, or Self-Motion, (be its Cause or Principle what it will,) is, I think, also necessary. For it either necessarily follows a Man's last Judgment or Volition, or it does not: If it does, it is then strictly and properly necessary: If it be faid that it does not necessarily follow, D d 4

is not That a Contradiction in the very Terms? Is it not to suppose the very same Creature Selfmoving and not Self moving at the very fame time? So that if the Idea of Freedom be the Idea of Self-Motive Power, it is so far from being oppos'd to Necessity, that it may be, and I think, it is it felf necessary. Thus then Necessary. ty is confishent with perfect Freedom, (i. e. with Sefimotive Power () And the Divine Being himfelf is in all his Actions necessary, in the Natural and Literal Sense of the Word. For it is as direct a Contradiction in Nature, to suppose All-Wisdom (if I may use that Term,) acting unjustly or cruelly (that is, unwisely;) as to Suppose Omnipresence confin'd: Since the Moral Attributes of God are as truly and properly Natural, as those which are distinguish'd by that Name; and are therefore equally necessary. But this is a very high Perfection in the Creator: It cannot therefore be an Imperfection in the Creature. Nothing can be more clear. But then will it not unavoidably follow, that no Creature can be accountable for his Actions? Every Action or Self-Motion necessarily follows the last Determination of the Understanding: Where then can the Blame lye, but at the Understanding? What is Sin, but Folly? And how can any Man be accountable for it, any more than for not being Wiser than God made him? Nothing remains, but to observe that I always use the Word Necessity in this Argument, to fignify, not an external Necessity or blind Impusse, but a Necessity Internal, which results from the very Being and Constitution of rational Nature, which latter will, I think, as naturally infer the Confe-

The Answer to the Second Letter.

409

Consequence I have deduc'd, as the former: And so conclude my felf

Your most Obliged

Humble Servant.

THE.

Answer to the Second LETTER.

Jan. 8th, 1717

SIR,

ITOUR Argument is urged with much Ingenuity. But it plainly appears to Me, that there is an Errour which lies under the Under that Term, you include Word Volition. both the final Perception of the Understanding. which is Passive; and also the first Operation on Exertion of the Alive Faculty or Self-motive Power. These two, you suppose to be necessarily connected. I think there is no connexion at all between them: And that in their not being connected, lies the Difference between Action and Passian: Which Difference, is the Essence of Liberty. If the two Things now-mentioned, were (as you suppose) connected by a true phyfical Necessity, there would remain no difference between Action and Passion, but this only, that What we now call an Agent, would erroneously imagine it self to be an Agent, when in reality it was merely passive. Nay, indeed, there would

410 The Answer to the Second Letter.

be no fuch Thing as an Agent of Allion in the Universe. Neither Man, nor Angel, nor even God himself, would all in any other sense, than a Balance determined on ones side by an overplus of Weight; supposing it indued with Perception or Understanding. Now the Consequence of This is, that there would be in the Universe, All Patient and No Agent, All Effect and No Cause: Which is a manifest and most express Contradiction.

Again: You plainly confound Moral Contradiction and Moral Necessity, with natural Contradiction and natural Necessary. Tis indeed a contradiction in Terms, Morally speaking, that a Wise Man should do a foolish Thing, or an honest Man a dishonest Thing: But 'tis no Contradiction in Physicks. And in God himself, were his doing Ads of Goodness and Mercy as physically necessary as his being Omnipresent; 'twofild be as about to Thank him for Doing Good, as for Being Ounipresent: Wherefore, were the moral Perfections of God Necessary (in the Jame physical Sense, as the Natural Attributes are. which have No Dependence on his Will or Power of Asing;) they would not be moral Perfections at all.

I am,

SIR,

Yours, &c.

THE

THE

Third LETTER.

Jan. 10th. 1716.

Reverend SIR,

OU have now brought the Debate into a very narrow Compass. The only Difficulty I find remaining, is, to disjoyn in my Mind the last Judgment or Perception of the Underflanding, and the first Exertion of the Self-motive Power. For let us suppose them disjoyn'd, and confider the Consequence. Will it not follow. that unintelligent Substance may be capable of Self-Motion, and mere Matter be as absolutely Free as Infinite Wisdom itself? Nay, if in any Inflance, Action or Self-Motion does not follow the last Perception or Judgment of the Understanding, the Agent must in That Instance be over-rul'd by a blind Impulse: There is no Medium. To confider this Matter more distinctly in the great Author of all Perfection: If his Actions do not necessarily follow the final Perception of his Understanding, how can it be proved that he is infinitely Just and Good?

The Third LETTER.

'Tis no Impossibility, on this Hypothesis, but he may All in the worst conceivable Manner, at the very same time when he Judges and Wills the best: For 'tis suppos'd that there is no Connection between Judgment and Self-motion, between Volition and Action. I do not understand your Distinction between Physical and Moral Neceffity, because indeed I have no Idea at all of the Latter. If it means the same which I express'd by the Term Necessity Internal; it has, I think, as clear and distinct a Foundation in Nature, as any Physical Necessity whatsoever. Which I defire you particularly to observe, because I had reason to suspect from your last Favour, that my Meaning was not sufficiently clear on that Head.

Iam SIR,

Your most Obliged

Humble Servant

THE

Answer to the Third LETTER.

Jan. 12th, 1717.

SIR,

412

Think your remaining Difficulty may be removed by the following Similitude. The Ferception or last Judgment of the Understanding,

ing, is as distinct from the actual Exertion of the Self-motive Power; as seeing the Way, is, from Walking in it. Not will it follow, because the Perception of the Understanding is denied to be the immediate efficient necessary Cause of the Exertion of the Self-motive Power, that therefore unintelligent Matter may be capable of Self-Motion; any more than it will follow, if a Man's Eyes be denied to be the immediate efficient necessary Cause of his Walking, that therefore the Man may be capable of walking, though he has neither Legs nor Life. A Man's Underflanding judges of what he is to do, as his Eyes discern the Way: But a Blind or winking Man has Power to walk without leeing; and every Tiving Agent has a phylical Power to act, whether he makes any Use of his Judgment and Understanding or no. Unintelligent Matter can be no Agent, because Attion supposes (in the very Notion of it) Life and Confciousness; But That Consciousness which makes Affion to be Affion is entirely a distinct Thing from That Perception or Tudement, by swhich a Man determines before, hand concerning the Reasonableness of Fitness of what he is about to act. An Agent over-ruled by a blind Impulse, is a Contradiction in Terms: for then he is not at all an Agent, but a mere Patient. But an Agent acting not according to the last Judgment of his Understanding, (meaning always by the last Judgment of the Understanding, the last passive Perception, and not the first active Volition of the Agent; which two Things must by no Means be confounded;) such an Agent, I fay, is like a Man shutting his Eyes, and walking at a Venture down a Precipice. God

The Answer to the Third Letter.

God always Discerns and Approves what is Just and Good, necessarily, and cannot do otherwise: But he always alls or does what is Just and Good, freely; that is, having at the same time a full natural or physical Power of acting differently. Otherwise, Justice (for Example) in God, would be nothing different from Juliace in a Sword, when it executes a just Sentence; Supposing the Sword to perceive what 'tis doing and yet cannot bely doing it. The Consequence whereof is, that there could not possibly be in God Any Moral Perfection at all. For every Thing that is of a Moral Nature, implies in the very Notion or Essence of it, the Doing of formething, which at the lame time was in the Agents Power not to have done, Moral Necessary therefore, is distinguished from Physical Necestity, fust as all other Figures of Speech are from Interal Expressions: That is, its in Truth, and philosophically speaking, no Necessay at all: And yet every one easily sees, that the Justice and Goodness of an infinitely perfect Free Agent, may as firmly and reasonably be relied on, as the Necessary Estect of any necessary Agent is known to be physically unavoidable.

I am SIR, &c.

(1) [1414]] ... (IT

HE THE

Last L E T T E R.

Fan. 24. 1716.

SIR,

PM HAVE now to my great Satisfa-Stion a clearer Infight, than I ever expected, into so Intricate a Question as we have been upon. The Confideration, that the last Judgment of the Understanding can have no Influence on Self-Motion, because there is no resemblance between an Action and a Perception of the Mind, and that therefore there must be some distinct Principle of Self-Motion entirely Independent on the perceptive Faculty, weighs very much with me; and I think it is very probable (as you observe.) that our want of clearly distinguishing between the Perceptive and the Adive Faculty, is the chief Origine of all Perplexity in this Question. I shall trouble you no farther on this. Occasion, but leave the Rest to Time, and repeated Reflection. But it were perfect Stupidity. or worse Ingratitude, not to acknowledge your Candour and even Friendship to an entire Stranger, who appear'd to be engag'd in the pursuit of Truth. I know not how to express my Sentiments

The Last LETTER.

416

ments of it with Truth and Sincerity, unless in a Manner which will certainly be disagreeable to you: But I should have no Sense of any thing that is Serious and Rational, if I knew not how to esteem it.

1 am, SIR, & ...

*** Linear, no of models in acts

*** Linear, no of models in acts

*** A refer over let only by the constant of the constant

REMARKS

UPON A

BOOK,

ENTITULED,

A Philosophical Enquiry

Concerning

Human Liberty.

By SAMUEL CLARKE, D.D. Rector of St. James's Westminster.

LONDON:

Printed, for JAMES KNAPTON, at the Crown in St. Paul's Church-Yard, 1717.

1					
-	2 7		T 新	H	. مم د د د
-	E.	KG	ij		·
		R. S.			****
	. I. I.	JUL	ENT		
	Triup C				3 , 1 2 , 1
		nci	00		
	steet.	I	liÜl	111	Ţ
į					
I.	REAL TOP ROY !				. (. 4).
1 1	`N				

 $L \circ N \oplus \circ N$

REMARKS upon a Book, entituled, A Philosophical Inquiry concerning Humane Liberty.

INCE the greater part of the fore-. going Papers were printed off, there has been published a Book entituled. A Rhilosophical Inquiry concerning Human Liberty : In which the Author propoles dix distinct Arguments, to prove that there neither is, nor can be, any Liberty in Human Actions. The Arguments he offers, have (I think) been already in great meafure obviated in the fore-going Papers. Yet because some of them seem to be placed in fuch a Light, as may possibly deceive unwary Persons, whose Thoughts have not been much conversant upon so nice a Subject; I thought it not improper, upon this Occasion, to set down such Brief Remarks, 28 might be sufficient to lay open to an intelligent Reader the Fallacy of the whole Book

In the First place, I observe; the Author lays great stress upon the necessity of Mens forming to themselves clear theas. expressing those Ideas in clear There is No Question (says * "month compass of Speculation, of rewords Men baye written more obscurely, and of " Which Bid Dought more impussible to dif " course dearly, and concerning which Men more expect and pardon obscure Onscourse, " than upon the Subjects of Litery, and Ne-" cessity: But this common Observation, (says " he,) is both a common and a learned Er-"rour Por wbosos smplay bir Thomphy on but ally Subjett rought to bave Literation by the Object of bis Thought "Thoughts' must also stail us as And a hlding webenever we barde Ideas we done as " ble to communicate Them tandibers by 4. Words 2. When drup Writer speaks alfante will it willy did be write bether be bade a to Meaning, or he find both at able is be press in to Orbers what he means as already some unpardonable, for a Man es cangi loko spretends to Teach at All This, is way well daid. Let us now the, how view. Adthor Himlelf has observed his workales Iruc.i: The Question herundertakes toldetermine, * Pag 11, is * Thus Rated by him; Mibetber Mith he and running a Free, or Necessary Agent. And the is con-Tith. L: 🐧

fident, that Men are & Necessary Agents it Pag 31. that All allow Mad Men, and Children, and Pag. 53. Bealts, to be * necessary Agents; that some 56, 92.
Actions, are plainly ** Actions that are ** Pag. 30. Necessary; that there can be no dispute, but + Pag. 32: Perception is a + Necessary Action of Man 3+ Pas. 99. and that Causes act on Necessary! Agents; to whom they are necellary Caules of Action. Now here I delire to know, what Idea the word Agent or Action carries along with it, when joined with Necessary. Well garly indeed, in loofe, figurative, and Improper Speech, we call Clocks and Watchet, Wecessary Agents. But in truth and findinels of speaking (which ought always to be calefully preserved in Philosophical Debites.) a Necessary Agent or Necessary Action is a Contradigion in Terms. For whatevel des Necessarily, does not indeed att at all, but is only acted upon; is not at all an Agent, but a mere Patient; does not move, bui is moved only. Clocks and Watthes, are in no Sense Agents; neither is their Motion, in any Senie, an Action. Nor is it merely, 4 for pref. p. 3. " want of Sensation and Intelligence, that "Clocks and Watches are subject to an ab"solute, Physical, and Mechanical Neces"sity". For the Pulfation of the Heart, though joined with Sensation, is yet as necessary a Motion, as that of a Clock; and the Une is nomore an Action of the Man, than the other is of the Clock. Nor would a Balance indued with Senfation and Intelliernce. Aaaa

gence, be any more an Agent when it felt nfelf moved by the Weights, than it is Now an Agent without Perception. cessary Agent therefore, I say, whether with or without Sensation, is No Agent at all: But the Terms are contradictory to each other. To be an Agent, signifies. to have a Potper of beginning Motion: And Motion cannot begin necessarily; because Necessity of Mation, supposes an Efficiency Superiour to, and irrelistible by the thing moved; and consequently the Beginning of the Motion cannot be in that which is moved necessarily, but in the superiour Cause, or in the Efficiency of some Other Cause still superiour to: That, till at length we arrive Iome Free Agent. Which Free Agent, may either (which is the case of Men,) have received the Power of beginning Motion, from the Will of a Superiour Free Agent: Or (which is the case of God Almighty,) he may be Himself necessarily existent, necessarily all-knowing, necessarily all-powerful; because Existence, Knowledge, Power, and the like, are not Actions; But he cannot be a necessary Agent, without an express contradiction in the very Terms. All Power of . Acting, effentially implies at the same time a Power of not acting: Otherwise 'tis not Acting, but barely a being acted upon by That Power (whatever it be) which Causes the A&ion. When therefore this Author talks fo much of Necessary Agents and Necessary Actions :

Actions; may not his own Question he very reasonably put to him, "Why did he write Pas" before he had a Meaning, or before he was

able to express to Others what he meaut?

Ls it not unpardonable for a Man to Cant,

who pretends to Teach"? Or if (as seems most probable,) his real Meaning is, that Man is not an Agent at all; his Question still returns, Why did be write, before be was Willing

to express to Others what he meant?

. Again: Does the Author really think that he expresses clear Ideas in clear Words when he constantly confounds Perception (wherein the Mind is entirely passive,) with Action itself? And by the word, Will, without Any Distinction, means sometimes the Last Perception of the Understanding. which is entirely passive; and sometimes the First exertion of the Self-moving Faculty, which again is Action? Thus he tells us, (Page 31,) "There can be no Dispute, but " Perception of Ideas is a necessary Action " of Man:" And yet, without all dispute, Perception of Ideas is No Action at all. Page 33, " A Second Action of Man, is judging of Propositions:" As if seeing a thing to be true or falle, was an Action, or had any thing to do with the Will. Page 65, The Physical power of doing, what a wife Man will certainly chuse not to do; or of forbearing to do, what yet a wise Man will not fail to do; is compared with being " Abla " to refuse our Assent to what it evidently Aaa 4

[8]

Which (as before,) is not an Action, but a Perception. Page 78, 79, 81 and 82, By the fame abfurd Confounding of what is Affive with what is Paffive, it is alleged, that, if Man was indued with Liberty of Action, he would not be necessa-" rily determined to Affent to Truth only;" he would hat "be necessarily determined in bis Micht, by what feents a reafon to bim; " he would "be indifferent to Propositions, notwithstanding un reason for them;" he might e reject what appears True to him, and affent to what feems abfurd to bim; he would have an " Indifference to receive Truth; he would be wapable of Judging contrary to his Renfon;" and would " not he neceffarily determined by the greatest Evi-" dence, to affent to Truth." From page 36 co 57, the words Willing and Preferring are continually made use of in the mall confused manner, to denote equally; and without Any Distinction, both the Last Perception or Judgment of the Understanding willich is entirely Passive, and also the First Exertion of the Self moving Power which is effentially Active. These Two Things, Flay, the Author constantly confounds together, as One Individual, by the ambiguous ufe of the words Willing and Preferring. Arguing, that because Willing and Prefer-Fing, fo far as those Words fignify the last Perception or Approhation of the Understanding, are Paffive and Necessary; therefore Willing

S (3)

ing and Preferring, when the same Words imply the first Exertion of the Self-moving Power, which is essentially Active, are no-cessary also. And because, when Will signi-Hes the actual exertion of the Self-moving Power, a Man then indeed must necessarily do that which he Wills, (because it is not possible that a Man should not do a thing, when he is supposed to do it;) therefore, when the same word [Will lignifies nothing more than the last Approbation of the Understanding, it shall still be true that a Man must Necessarily do (using the word Necessa-rily in the Physical and proper Sense) what which his Understanding approves. Than which Consequence, nothing can be more weak. For though the Self-moving Power, (which, if it is not Free, is a contradiction in Terms, is an adequate Caule of Action; yet Underflanding or Judgment or Assent or Approbation or Liking, or whatever Name you please to call it by, can no more possibly be the efficient Cause of Action, than Rest can be the Cause of Motion. Nothing can possibly be the Cause of an Effect more considerable than itself. Nothing that is passive, can possibly be the Cause of any thing that is Active. An occasion indeed, it may be; and Action may be consequent (tho' without any Physical connexion,) upon Perception or Judgment; nay, it may easily (if you please) be supposed to be ALWAYS consequent upon it, and yet that at the same time there be no manner of Phyfical

fical or necessary connexion between them. For instance: God's performing his Promise, is ALWAT'S consequent upon his making it: Yet there is no connexion between them, as between Cause and Effect: For, not the Promise of God, but his Active Power is the alone 'Physical or efficient Cause of the Performance. "When Authors, who in other respects are e-

J4L. 9.

" qual, treat of any Subjects further than they " have clear and distinct Ideas; they do and " cannot but write to as little purpose, and " take as absurd pains, as the most ignorant

Le Authors do.

Again: What is become of clear and difinct Ideas, when we are told of " Actions have determined he the CAUSES precedbeing determined by the CAUSES preced-" ing each Action?" of Man's being " Ever unst avoidably determined in every point of time " by the Circumstances be is in, and the "CAUSES be is under, to do that one thing be does, and not possibly to do any other"? of PAG. 32. 26 This first necessary Action, [viz. Perception, which is No Action at all,] being " Foundation and CAUSE of all the other Pag. 87. " intelligent Actions of Man"? and, of " Plea-" fure and Pain being CAUSES to determine "Mens Wills." For, what Idea can any Man frame, how Pleasure or Pain, which are mere passive Perceptions; or how Reasons, Motives, and Arguments, which are mere abstract Noti-

ons, can be the physical, necessary, and efficient Cause of Astion? May not an abstract Notion as well strike a Ball, as be the efficient

Cause

Cause of Motion in a Man's Body? Occasions indeed they may be, and are, upon which That Substance in Man, wherein the Selfmoving Principle relides, freely exerts it's Active Power. But 'tis the Self-moving Principle, and not at all the Reason or Motive, which is the physical or efficient CAUSE of Action. When we fay, in vulgar Speech, that Motives or Reasons DETERMINE a Man; 'tis nothing but a mere Figure or Metaphor. Tis the Man, that freely deter-mines bimself to act. Reasons, or Perceptions of the Understanding, can no more (properly and strictly speaking) determine an Action, than an abstract Notion can be a Substance or Agent, can strike or move a piece of Matter. Unless All that this Gentleman advances about Reasons and Motives and Perceptions of the Understanding, be mere * Cant; and his * pag. 8. true meaning be, that Man is indeed No Agent at all, but is moved necessarily and mechanically by mere Impulses of subtle Matter. And then the Question will still for ever return upon him, about the Original Cause of Motion; Which must either finally be resolved into a First Mover, in whom consequently there is Liberty of Action; or else into an infinite and eternal Chain of Effects without Any Cause at all: Which is an express contradiction, except Motion could be necessarily-existent in its own Nature; Which that it is not, is evident, because the Idea of Rest is no contradiction; and also because

cause there being no Motion without a particular Determination one certain way, and no one Determination being in nature more necessary than another, an essential and necessary Tendency to Motion in all Determinations equally, could never have produced any Motion at all.

Lastly: By what clean and distinct Ideas can any Man perceive, that an Indifferene, as to Pawer, (that is, an equal Physical Power either of acting or of forbearing to ad;) and an Indifferency as to Inclination, (that is, an equal Approbation or Liking of one. Thing or of the contrary;) is One and the same Thing? And yet these Two, are constantly confounded through the whole Book: The Author always supposing, that if a Man is not determined as necessarily and irresistibly, as a Weight determines the Motion of a Balance; then he can in no Degree be influenced by, nor can have any Regard to, any Motives of Reasons of Action whatsoever, but must be totally indifferent to All Actions alike. Thus page 66, an " In-" differency to good and evil" is put as equivalent to a Physical Possibility of doing what appears least eligible; And a Physical Possibility of doing what appears least eligigible, is represented as a Necessity of doing what appears leaft eligible; like "Infants "that cannot walk, left to go alone, with "Liberty to fall". Page 72, 73, Liberty "Liberty to fall". Page 72, 73, Liberty is represented as an "arbitrary Faculty, to ebuse

" chyse without Regard to the Qualities of "Objects; indifferent to all Objects, and " [waged by no Motives in the Chaire of " Objects". Page 79: 80, "Indifferent to " any Objects, notwithstanding they seemed "good: - Indifference to Pleasure and Pain, that is, Liberty to refuse the first, and thuse the last " Page 87, 28, 'Tis argued, that, " were Psin, as fuch, elivible," [that is, POSSIBLE to be chaften for the Word must be understood in this Place; and Pleasure, as such, avoidable; Rewards " and Punishments sould by NO MOTIVES That unless " Plaasura and " to a Man". " Pain bave a NECESSART Effect on Men. " and it be IMPOSSIBLE for Men not &co " of what USE would be the Profest of "Remards or Punishmenta"? 'And, "if "—all Men COULD prefer or will Pumish-" ment considered as Pain, and reject Reswards considered as Pleasure. Man mould " be under NO RESRAINT" Page 89, 90. It is supposed to follow, if Man be not a Necessary Agent, that then, he is, not at all " affected with Pleasure and Pain? but is 1' indifferent to Pleasure and Pain", and " equally indifferent to Morality and Immo-" rainty". The same absurd Supposition, is repeated again, ange 96. And page 99, tis alleged, that the represent Reasons to " Men, - would be af my Wie, if Men bad " Free-Wills, or their Wills overs not moved If by them", As if nothing could possibly be of any Weight, or of any Use with Men, that did not Necessitate them: And is a Person be not determined irresistibly, then he must be totally indifferent to All Actions alike, and can have no Regard to Motives or Reasons of Action at all. Of which Consequence, no Man can have a clear idea; till it has first been proved, that Salf-Moving or Active Power, is inconsistent with having any Regard to Reasons of Acting.

I'm me I ge

In the Next Place, I observe, that the Author endeavours to impose upon his Reader a Falle Definition of Liberty. " I con-Send, lays " he, for Liberty, as it fignifies *Pref. p.2. Sena, 1245 in Man, to do as be wills or oleafeile. And this he elsewhere files at & Valuable Liberty. Now in this Definisove, pag. try of the Words, will or pleases; it ought and 9 carefully to be remarked that the word, Do, has no Signification of For his Meaning is not, that the Min alls or does any Thing: But the Liberty, of Power in Man, to do as be wills or pleases, is, with Him, exactly and only the same, as the Liberty or Power in a Balance would be! to move as it wills or plenfer, supposing the Balance indued with such a Sensation or Micelligence, as enabled it to perceive which way the Weights turned it, and to approve the Motion, to as to fancy that it mouse refets, when indeed it was

was only moved by the Weights. That this is his real Meaning, appears plainly from hence; that he makes the Difference between a Man and a Clock, to confift only in the Senfation and Intelligence, not in any the Pref. Power of adding. Whereas indeed the whole Essence of Liberty, consists in the Power of adding. Action and Liberty, are identical lideas: And the True DEFINITION of a Free-Being, is, One that is indued with a Power of affine as well as of being afted uponi.

This Miltake in the Notion of Physical Liberty and Necessity, led him also into the like Mistake in this Notion of Moral Decay first) Moral Necessary, in reut and Philosopalical Strictness, is not indeed any Netelle ... to at all; but his merely a figurative Manner of Speaking, which, like all Other Juni rative Expressions, has nothing at all of Phyfieal Reality in it. When a Man Tays, he fannot POSSIBLY be deceived in relyims on the Word of a Person of known Veracity the Meaning is not, that That Other Person has no Power to deceive him, or that (with Regard to the Physical Action) it is not as easte for That Person to depart from his Promise, as to keep it; but that the Man has great Reason to depend on fuch a Person's Character, that he shall not be deceived by him. But now this Author makes * Moral * Pref. Necessity and Physical Necessity to be exactly page 3: and Philosophically the same Thing: Only

with this Distinction, that Physical Negoff sity, in an Unintelligent Subject, is Phylical Noteffity; that that the lame Abylical Neceffer ty, in an Intelligent Subject, is any Moral Necessity. When a Stone falle of a Clack or Watch moves, it moves by a Phylical Necession: But when a Man talle; or whom he his determined to do Any Allian, which he is exactly under the lavie Physical Neces fer of doing i (only with this Gircumsance, that his Understanding appropriation is please ed with it,) as he is of falling when he is thrown down a Precipice within hit feems) is Moral Neverlies only no which Matter; the Muthor his mustry of a double Abfurday. First, in supposing Reasons or Marines (unrag 8. less those Tenns; he more * Some) to inside the fame massifary Impulse open Intelligent Subjects, as Master in Musion class upon unintelligent Subjects; which is supposing de-Britis Notions to be Substaneas. And Secondition in endeavouring to allowofe it upon his Reader as a thing taken for granted, that Moral Neverthan and Abyliand Meaffity do not differ intrinfically in their com Name. trief. p.3. but only with Regard to the i Suggest they ane applied to: Whent on the entrary he well knows, it hat a by Mond Negellits, con-Sthent. Writers neven meantany shing money than to express in al figurative ! Manner tho And Containty of duchen Event, so may in Res-· fon be fully depended upon, though literal h and in Philosophical Societable of Truth, there tim x

there be no Necessity at all of the Event. Thus if God has promised that the World Ihall continue another Year, 'tis a very natural and obvious Manner of Expression, to fay that the World cannot possibly come to an End This Year; and yet no reasonable Person is by that Manner of speaking led to imagine, that God has not at this moment the very same physical Power of destroy. ing the World, as he will have at any time hereafter. And therefore 'tis with great una fairness, that this Author, at the Conclusion of his Book, having cited from Dr Clarke a Passage wherein such a figurative Expresfion occurs, makes from thence the following Inference: "In this, fays * he, Dr Clarke * Pag. 111: " plainly allows the Necessity for which I have contended: For he assigns the same " Causes of buman Actions, that I have done; " and extends the Necessity of humane Ac-"tions as far; when he afferts that a Man " cannot, under those Causes, possibly do the " the contrary to what he does." Dr Clarke's words were these: "A Man intirely free " from all Pain of Body and Disorder of "Mind, judges it unreasonable for him to "hurt or destroy himself; and, being un "der no temptation or external Violence, " he cannot possibly act contrary to this Judg-" ment: Not because he wants a natural or " physical Power so to do, but because it is " abfurd and mischievous and Morally impof-, " fible, --- that with a perfect Knowledge of

Bbb

" what

" what is best, and without Any temptation " to evil, his Will should determine itself to " choose to act foolishly and unreasonably." It was reasonable to expect, that these words [" Not because be wants a Natural or Phy-" fical Power so to do", had been sufficiently explicatory of the foregoing ones. And yet This ingenious Writer has found a way to put an absurd Interpretation even upon These last Words also. " As to a na-"tural or physical Power in Man, to act trae 111. "contrary to That judgment; this (says the)
"—is so far from being inconsistent with the
"Doctrine of Necessity, that—'tis a Con"sequence of the Doctrine of Necessity: " For if Man is necessarily determined by " particular moral Caufes, and cannot then " possibly act contrary to what he dees; " be must, under OPPOSITE moral "Causes, have a Power to do the contrary". That is to fay: A Man's having, under the SAME moral Causes, (which is evidently the Sense of Dr Clarke's words,) a Physical Power to do the contray to what he does; means only his having, under the OPPOSITÉ moral Causes, a Physical Power to do the contrary to what he does.

This being premised; I proceed now briefly to consider the Six Arguments, by which the Author undertakes to prove, that Man is (what by a plain contradiction in Terms he calls) a Necessary Agent; and that there neither is, nor can be, any such thing as Liberty.

His First Argument is: That Experience, which the Vulgar urge in Proof of Liberty, pag. 11,12. is not a Proof of it: That many celebrated Pag. 14,-Philosophers and Theologers, both antient and 19. modern, have given Definitions of Liberty, that are consistent with Fate or Necessity; That fome Great Patrons of Liberty, do, pag. 19,by their Concessions in this matter, destroy 30. all Arguments from Experience: That Allpag. 31 the Actions of Men may be ranked under 56. the four Heads of Perception, Judging, Willing, and Doing as we will; and that Experience does not prove Any of these to be Free: And laftly, that Experience not only does not page 31,52 prove Liberty, but, on the contrary, Men may 109. see by Experience that they are Necessary Agents; 'Tis matter of Experience, that Man is ever Determined in his Willing; We experience perfect Necessiaty; and they who think Liberty a matter of Experience, yet allow that the Will follows the Judgment of the Under-flanding, and that, when two Objects are pre-fented to a Man's Choice, one whereof appears better than the other, he cannot choose the worst.

1. To the first part of This Argument, viz. that Experience, which the Vulgar urge in Proof of Liberty, is not a Proof of it: I answer; that All our Actions do Now in experience Seem to us to be Free, exactly in the Same Manner, as they would do upon

B b b

supposition of our being really Free Agents: And consequently, though This alone does not indeed amount to a strict Demonstration of our being Free; yet it leaves on the other fide of the Question nothing but a bare Poffibility of our being so framed by the Author of Nature, as to be unavoidably deceived in this matter by every experience of every Action we perform. The case is exactly the same, as in that notable Question, whether the World exists or no. There is no Demonstration of it from Experience: There always remains a bare Possibility, that the Supreme Being may have so framed my Mind, as that I shall always necessarily be deceived in every one of my Perceptions as in a Dream, the' possibly there be No material World, nor any other Creature whatfoever, existing belides my Self. Of This, I say, there always remains a bare possibility: And yet no Man in his Senses argues from thence, that Experi rience is no Proof to us of the Existence of Things.

2. But many celebrated Philosophers and Theologers, both antient and modern, have given Definitions of Liberty, that are confifient with Fate and Necessity. I answer: Whether this be so, or no, is nothing to the purpose. The true definition of Liberty, is, a Power to Ast; as I have just now shown, pag. 15. When This Gentleman can show that Astion, or the Power of Acting, is consistent with Fate or Necessity; then he will gain his Point.

2. But

3. But further; Some of the greatest Page 19,Patrons of Liberty, do, by their Concessions 30.
in this matter, sufficiently destroy all Arguments from Experience. I answer again: Whether This also be so, or no, is nothing at all to the purpose. The Question is not, what any Man has or has not conceded, but what the Truth of the Case is.

what the Truth of the Case is. of Men may be ranked under the four Heads 36. of Perception, Judging, Willing, and Doing as we will; and that experience does not prove Any of these to be Free: I answer: First, As to the Perception of Idea's; this is not an Action at all, but a mere Passive Faculty; And therefore all that the Author Pag-32. here advances about its being a Necessary Action, is an entire Absurdity. Secondly, As p. 2.33,314 to Judging of Propositions, that is, (as the Author here explains it,) affenting to what? appears true, and diffenting from what appears false; This also, like feeling what we feel, or hearing what we hear, is not an Action at all, but is merely passive; And is therefore absurdly called, Another Action of Man. Attention indeed, or a Man's chufing to fix his Thoughts on one Subject rather than another, is an Action; and therefore belongs not to This Head, but comes properly under the fourth Head, of Doing as we will: But Affenting to what appears True, or Diffenting from what appears False, are not Actions. Thirdly, As to Willing; This page 34, Bbb 2 word Bbb 3

Word (as I before observed) has a great Ambiguity in it, and fignifies two distinct Things. Sometimes it signifies the last Perception or Approbation of the Understanding, and sometimes the first Exertion of the Self-moving or Active Faculty. It can only be in the former Sense of the Word, that this Aupag. 40. thor fays. " Willing or Preferring, is the fame with Respect to Good and Evil, that "Judging is with Respect to Truth or Falshood:
"It is JUDGING that one thing is upon the " whole better than another, or not so had as " another". And it can only be in the latter Sense of the Word, that he says, " This 198. 37. " Power of the Man thus to order the Begin-" ning or Forbearance, the Continuance or End-" ing of any Action, is called the Will; and " the ACTUAL EXERCISE thereof, Wil-" ling". Now these two things, tho' expressed by the fame Word, are yet very different things, and have no Similitude the The one is entirely pafone to the other. five, belonging to the Understanding only, and has nothing to do with the Question about Liberty; The other is truly active, and therefore comes not under this Head, but under the following fourth Head of Doing as we will. By confounding these two things together, the Author constantly amuses and perplexes his Reader: By distinguishing them carefully, the Difficulties he proposes, are all easily removed. Thus, to that Question;

37." Whether we are at Liberty to will, or

pag. 38.

": not to will ": The true Answer is; in the former Senle of that Word, we are not at Liberty; in the latter Sense of it, we are. To the Question, "Whether we can fuspend Willing, or no;" (in which, the Learned and Judicious Mr. Locke was indeed much perplexed:) the Answer is the same; that, in the former Sense of the Word Willing, we cannot suspend; in the latter, we To the Question, "Whether we are " at Liberty to Will or chuse one or the o-"ther of two or more Objects": The Answer is still the same; in the former Sense of the Word, we are not at Liberty; in the latter, we are. Nor does it make any Alteration in this Case, whether the Objects - 52. proposed be perfectly alike and indifferent, or whether they be unlike and different. For if the Understanding judges them to be indifferent, it cannot help judging them to be indifferent; and if it judges them to be different, it cannot help judging them to be different: And yet in either Case, the Selfmoving Faculty retains fully a Physical Power, or Liberty, of actually exerting itself towards either of the indifferent, or either of the different Objects. Which Liberty of acting, with Regard to the indifferent Objects, is a moral as well as Physical Liberty: But with Regard to the Different Objects, 'tis joyned with that Inclination, which (by an usual Figure of Speech) is stiled Moral Necessity; Which every rational Being does Bbb 4

so much the more constantly and regularly follow, as the Being is more rational and perfect; but which nevertheless is as far from intrenching in the least Degree upon Literal and Physical Liberty, as even a perfect Indifferency itself. This, I say, is plainly the true Answer to all the foregoing Questions: Except it be denied, that there is at all in Man any Self moving Power: Which shall be considered presently in its proper Place. Fourthly and lastly; as to that which org 31, This Gentleman calls the Fourth (but which is indeed the Only) Action of Man, viz. DOING as we will, or actually exerting the Self-moving Faculty: Of this I say, as before, that fince in All Cases it does now by Experience Seem to us to be free, that is, Seem to us to be really a Self moving Power, exactly in the same Manner as it would do upon Supposition of our being actually Free Agents; the bare physical Possibility of our being so framed by the Author of Nature, as to be unavoidably deceived in this Matter by every Experience of every Action we perform, is nd more any just Ground to doubt the Truth of our Liberty, than the bare natural Possibility of our being all our life-time, as in a Dream, deceived in our Belief of the Existence of the Material World, is any just Ground to doubt of the Reality of its Exifrance. But this Author goes still further; and contends, not only that Experience is no Proof of Liberty, but

5. That

5. That, on the contrary, Men may fee by page 31, Experience, that they are necessary Agents: 52, and That 'tis Matter of Experience, that Man is ever determined in his Willing: That we experience perfect Necessity: That if we Will any Actions, we find we MUST do those Actions, unless some external Impediment binders us: That Man is ever unavoidably determined in every Point of Time, by the Circumstances he is in, and CAUSES he is under, to do That One thing he does, and not Possibly to do any other: And that They who think Liberty a Matter of Experience, yet: allow that the Will follows the Judgment of the Understanding, and that, when two Objects are presented to a Man's Choice, he CANNOT choose the worst. To all which, I answer:

First; The Experience of a Man's ever doing what he judges reasonable to do, is not at all an Experience of his being under any Necessity so to do. For Concomitancy in this Case, is no Evidence at all of Physical Connexion. Upon Supposition of perfect Liberty, a reasonable Being would still constantly do what appeared reasonable it should do: And therefore its constantly doing so, is no Proof at all of its wanting Liberty or a Physical Power of doing otherwise: See above, page 9, 10.

But Secondly: Either Man has within himfelf a Faculty or Principle of Self-Motion, that is, a Power of Beginning Motion; or he

bas not.

If he bas within himself a Principle or Power of Self-Motion; then (which is the Essence of Liberty,) That active Substance, in which the Principle of Self-Motion inheres, is it felf the only proper, Physical, and immediate CAUSE of the Motion or Action: For, that any thing extrinsick to the Agent, should be the Mover, or Physical Cause of the Solf-Motion, is a Contradiction in Terms. And if it be faid, that Reasons or Motives are the Causes of Action > this can be true only in a Figurative Sense: For, to make Reasons or Motives the Literal and Physical Cause of Motion or Action, is supposing abstract Notions to be Substances. In like manner; if it be faid, a Man MUST do those Actions which he Wills, and CAN-NOT do otherwise; this also must either be understood in a figurative Sense only, if by the word Will be meant merely the approbation of the Understanding: or else, if by the word [Will] be meant the actual exertion of the Self-moving Power, then the saying a Man MUST necessarily do those actions which he Wills, signifies nothing more than that it is not possible for a Man not to do a thing at the same time that he is Supposed to do it.

But now, on the other hand, if a Man bas not within himself a Principle of Self-motion, or a Power of Beginning Motion; then, being No Agent at all, (notwithstanding his Perception or Intelligence,) any more than

than a Clock or a Watch; his Motions must all be wholly owing to the efficient Impusse of some extrinsick Cause, and the Motions of That to the Efficiency of some Other Cause; and so on; till either at length we arrive at some Free Agent, in whom is perfect Liberty, or esse we must go on in infinitum through an eternal Chain of dependent Effects without Any Cause at all; Which is Absurd.

See above, pag. 6 & 11.

The Author concludes this Argument, with observing that the Actions of Children and of 56, Beasts, are allowed, by the Greatest Advocates of Liberty, to be All necessary: And thereupon asks, To what Age do Children continue necessary Agents, and When do they become Free? I answer: If any Advocates of Liberty have allowed any fuch thing, it was very weakly done of them. The Actions of Children, and the Actions of every living Creature, are all of them effentially Free. The Mechanical and voluntary Motions of their Bodies, such as the Pulsation of the Heart, and the like, are indeed all necessary; but they are none of them Actions. Action, every Motion arising from the Selfmoving Principle, is essentially free. The Difference, is This only. In Men, this Physical Liberty is joined with a Sense or consciousness of moral good and evil, and is therefore eminently called Liberty. In Beasts, the same Physical Liberty or Self-moving Power, is wholly separate from a Sense or consciousness or capacity of judging of moral good and evil; and is vulgarly called Spontaneity. In Children, the same Physical Liberty always is from the very Beginning; And in proportion as they increase in Age, and in capacity of Judging, they grow continually in Degree, not more Free, but more Moral, Agents,

His Second Argument to prove Man a Necessary Agent, is, " because all his Actions " bave a Beginning: For whatever bas a Beginning, must have a Cause; And every ". Cause, is a Necessary Cause." gain: " If Any Action what soever, can be; done without a Cause; then Effects and "Causes have no necessary relation, and by " consequence we should not be necessarily de-" termined in any case at all." The Fallacy of This Argument, lies in the words, Neceffary Cause. 'Iis true,' that whatever has a Beginning, must have a Cause. 'Tis true also, that every Cause is a Necessary Cause; that is, that every adequate efficient Caufe, when it is supposed to operate, cannot but produce the Effect, of which it is at That time an adequate efficient Cause. But This i is faying nothing more, than that any thing must needs be, when it is supposed that it is, "Which is nothing to the Question about Libarty and Necessity. For the Free Self-moving Comper, when it is supposed to exert it self, can-

not

not but produce that Motion or Astion, of which it is at that time the immediate efficient Cause. If I militake not therefore; This Argument (in the True Intent and Meaning of the Author) is enfirely founded upon the Supposition, that there neither is nor can be in Nature any luch thing as a Self-moving Power at all. For, What else is the Meaning of his affirming, that, if Mans Actions are not Necessary, (that is, if they be not physically and efficiently caused by mechanical Impulse of Matter, which is making them to be mere Passions and not Actions at all; or by Reasons and Motives, which is making Reasons and Motives to be physical Agents or Substances;) then a thing can have a Beginning, which pag. 57. " bas no Cause;" and, " Nothing can produce " Something?" And when he tells us, that " if Any Action what soever can be done With pag. 82. " out a Cause, then Effects and Causes have " no neccessary relation, and by consequence " we should not be necessarily determined in " Any case at all;" And that, " if in the Pag. 82 " most indifferent things there was not a " Cause of Choice, but a Choice " be made without a Cause, then All Choices " might he made without a Cause, and we " should not be necessarily determined by the " greatest Evidence to Assent to Truth:" What is this, but Supposing that there is no fuch thing in nature as a Self-moving Power; and that if every Action and Choice be not as necessarily determined by something over

which the Person has No Power, as our Assent to Truth (which is not at all an Action or a Choice) is necessarily determined by the appearing Evidence; then an Action is done absolutely without any Cause at all, and Nothing can produce Something? This, I say, but Supposing (instead of proving) that there neither is nor can possibly be, any fuch thing as Self-moving or Active Power, not in Man only, but even in no other Being whatsoever, no not even in God bimfelf? For, the Argument is Universal: And Pag. 59: the Conclusion also is Universal: " Liberty " (says he) or a Power to act or not to act, " to do this or another thing under the same ~ Causes, is an Impossibility." The Argument therefore standing thus: I answer; (Though to the bare Supposition, that a Selfmoving or Active Power is impossible, it were fufficient to oppose the contrary Supposition, that such a Power is not impossible: But I answer;) If there be no such thing in nature, as a Self-moving or Active Power or Principle of beginning Motion, (which is the Essence of Liberty;) then there is, in the Motions of the Universe, an infinite progression of dependent Effects without any Cause at all; an infinite progression of passive Communications, without any Agent, without any thing Active at all in Nature. Which is a manifest Contradiction; Unless Motion could be necessarily-existent: Which that it cannot possibly be, I have shown above, pag. 11, 12. I can-

I 31]

I cannot omit to take notice here by the way, that This Gentleman, in the passage way. So, and contends that "Liberty, not only also; and contends that "Liberty stands, "and can only be grounded, on the absurd "Principles of Epicurean Atheism." Mr. Leibnitz has done the same, in his Debate with Dr. Clarke, Paper IV, \$ 18; and Paper V, \$ 70. As if Epicurus's supposing Lifeless Atoms to be moved by Chance, that is, by Causes to Him unknown; was the same thing as our ascribing either to God or Man, a Principle or Power of Action or of beginning Motion.

The Authors Third Argument against Li- III. berty, is, that Liberty would not be a Per 1.12.62, — fection, but an Impersection; and that to be a Necessary Agent, is an Advantage and a Persection. And upon this Argument, he is very large.

He alleges, that Men would be irrational 1.63.

Agents, if they had a power if judging otherwise than according to appearing evidence; And that nothing "can be more ir-142.64."

"rational and inconsistent, than to be able to "refuse our Assent to what is evidently true" to us, and to assent to what we see to be "evidently false." All which, is very right. But this Argument is founded on a ridiculous definition of Liberty; as if a Power of

of Acting, implied also a Power of Under-

ft anding, as Men pleased.

Pag. 66. - He supposes, that a Power [a Physical Power] of choosing Evil as Evil, implies being "indifferent to Good and Evil"; "in-

"different to what causes pleasure or pain;"

"indifferenc to all Objects, and swayed by

"no Metives:". Which is supposing, that
whatever, things are naturally possible for a

Man to do, he has an equal inclination to do.

He urges, that Liberty would be an Imperfection; because 'tis an Imperfection, to be capable of chusing Misery. And, by the

fame Argument, Existence or Life, in all Beings except God Almighty, is an Imperfection; because it subjects them to a Possibility of Pain and Uneasiness. Also Virtue and Moral Goodness will, for the same reason, be imperfections; because they essentially include a Physical Power of doing what is Evil. And even in the Divine Nature itself it would be a contradiction to suppose any Moral perfection, if God was under the same physical necessity of doing all the good be does, as he is

of being Omepresent and Omniscient.

pag 68.

He argues, that " a Power to will or chuse " at the same time any one out of two or more " indifferent things, would be no perfection;" because, if the things were " really indif-

"ferent," there could be no "Benefit" arifing from the Choice. This is the same Argument, by which Mr. Leibnitz proved that its impossible for God ever to have created

any two pieces of Matter exactly alike, because, whatever Situation he placed them in, there could be no Benefit in their not being

transposed.

He insists, that this " arbitrary faculty pag. 72,68. " would subject a Man to more wrong Choices," to " more Mistakes, than Man consider-" ed as a Necessary Being," [as a Necessary Agent, he means ;] " determined in his Choice." That is to say: The Power of Choosing, subjects a Man to make more wrong Choices, than if he had no Power of Choosing at all. Which is undoubtedly true. But if the Power of Choosing, be an imperfection; then Life and Activity, which effentially involve a Power of Choosing, are imperfections likewise; and a Stone is a more perfect Cteature than a Man.

He asks, concerning the Perfection of God; " can any thing be perfect, that is not Necessa-Must is to fay; If God " rily perfect?" be necessarily indued with perfect Liberty, then, by reason of That necessity, he cannot

be indued with any Liberty at all.

Again: " Is it not a Perfection in God; Ne 1:8. 74. " cessarily to Know all Truth, and to be ne-" ceffarily Happy"? I answer: Yes; Because Knowledge and Happiness are neither of them Actions.

Again: Is it not also a Perfection in him, pag. 74. " to Will and Do ALW AT'S what is Best? I answer; Yes: But not to Do so by a Phyfical Necessity; because That is not a Perfection, but a Contradiction in Terms. Whate-Ccc

VET

ver is physically necessary, is No Action, nei-

ther in God, nor in any other Being.

P48- 742

76, 77.

He cites, with Great Satisfaction, certain Weak Expressions of Some very Learned and Eminent Men, concerning all things being in their own nature indifferent; and becoming Good, only by God's Willing them: Also concerning infinite Perfection excluding Successive Thoughts in God: And that the Essence of God is one perfect Thought: And that tho' bis Transient Acts are done in a Succession of Time, yet his Immanent Acts, his Knowledge and his Decrees, are One with his Essence: And that the Immanent Acts of God being supposed Free, 'tis not easy to imagine how they should be One with the divine Essence, to which Necessary Existence does most certainly belong : And that if the Immanent Acts of God are neceffary, then the Transient must be so likewise, be being the certain effects of his Immanent Acts: And that thus a Chain of necessary Fate must run through the whole Order of things; and God himself then is no Free Being. All which, and many other the like Citations, are nothing at all to the Purpole: Proving nothing, but only showing the pernicious Effects of Scholastick Jargon, which has sometimes imposed so far even upon very Learned and Good Men, as to make them think that More Knowledge is conveyed into the Mind by words that have no Signification, than by mere inarticulate Sounds.

pag. 78, He alleges, that Saints in Heaven cease to & 67. have Liberty; and that Angels are more perfeet 西班牙山

feet than Men, because they are nevessarily de-termined to judge right in relation to Truth and Falshood, and to chuse right in Relation to Good and Evil. I answer: Neither Saints. nor Angels, nor God himself, have in anydegree the less Liberty, upon account of the Perfection of their Nature: Becaule, between the physical Power of Action, and the Perfect. ion of Judgment which is not Action, (which two things This Author constantly confounds,) there is no Connexion. God judges what is right, and approves what is Good, by a physical necessity of Nature; in which physical necessity, all notion of Action is necessarily excluded: But Doing what is good, is wholly owing to an Active Principle, in which is effentially included the notion of Liberty. Nor is it any thing to the purpole, that, in a perfect Being Doing right is Always concomitant with, or consequent upon, Judging right; unless it was a Consequence in the way of Physical connexion between Cause and Effect: Which that it is not, and cannot be, I have shown above, (pag. 9;) both from the Nature of the thing, and from the Instance of a Promise made by a Perfect Being, which is ALWATS followed with Performance, and yet, being a mere Abstract. cannot be itself a physical or immediate efficient Cause of Action. A proper physical efficiency might as well, and with as much truth, be ascribed to Final Causes, which every one knows to be nothing but Abstract Consideras tions ; CEC 2

tions; as it is by This Author ascribed to Moral Causes, to Reasons, Arguments, Judg-

ment, and the like.

All that follows upon This Head, is no-146. 78, thing but Repetitions of the same groundless Notions: That Man would be more perfect than he is, if he were indued with only Pas-Jive and Perceptive Faculties, without any proper Active Powers: That if Man was not a Necessary Agent, then he would be INDIF-FERENT both to Propositions and Objects; he could be convinced upon no Principles; all Reasonings would be of no Use to him; he might reject what appears True to bim, and affent to tohat appears absurd to bim; and all his Motions, would depend upon Chance: Lastly, that if a Man's Actions were not Necessain, then there would not be a Cause of Choice, but a Choice could be made without a Cause. and All Choices could be made without a Caufe. and we should not be necessarily determined by the greatest Evidence to Assent to Truth. &c. Than all which Attertions, nothing can be more absurd; They being all built entirely upon fuch Suppositions as these; that there is no Middle between Nevessity and Absolute Indifferency; that Perception of Truth, is as much an Action, as Doing what is right; and that either Necessity or Nothing, is the efficient Cause of all Choice and Action: As if there could not possibly be any such thing in Nature, either in Man or in Any Other Being whatsoever, as a Power or Principle of beginning

[37]

ning Motion. Concerning which Matter, see above, pag. 30.

His Fourth Argument against Liberty, is, IV. that 'tis inconsistent with the Divine Prescieience: For "if God foreknows the existence pag. 82,84. " of any thing, as it depends on its own. " Causes; That existence is no less necessary; "than if it was the Effect of his Decree: " For it no less implies a Contradiction, that " Causes should not produce their Effects; "than that an Event should not come to pass, " which is decreed by God." The Fallacy of which Argument, arises merely from a Narrowness or Defect in Language; The word Prescience being used to signifie Two distinct Attributes or Perfections of the Divine Nature, which, though vulgarly called by the Same common Name, are yet as really and truly different from each other, as any other two Attributes whatfoever. This will appear by confidering, that the only means we have of framing to our felves any true Notion of the Divine Perfections, is, by way of Analogy; inlarging in our Ideas, to an infinite Degree, every kind of Perfection which we observe in Finite Intelligent Beings. Now One fort of Perfection is, Knowledge. And Knowledge, in Men, signifies Three distinct Things. A Man who never was in France, KNOWS that there is such a Place as Paris: And here the word, Knowledge, means nothing but a firm Belief, founded upon un-Ccc 3 questionable

questionable Evidence. A Man KNOWS, that the three Angles of a Triangle are equal to two right ones: Here the word, Knawledge, fignifies Science, or the Perception of a Truth which is necessary in its own Nature. A Man KNOWS, that a very Covetous Perlon, whose Temper he is perfectly acquainted with, will certainly accept a very gainful Proposal when laid before him: And here the word, Knowledge, means nothing but right and good Judging. Now, to apply this to the present Argument: The former of these three sorts of Knowledge, can in no case, and in no degree whatfoever, have any place in God; because it effentially includes, in its very Notion, a finiteness or limitation of Presence. But the Second fort of Knowledge, the Science or Perception of necessary Truths, is, in God, just as much more extensive and perfect than Man, as his infinite nature is more perfect than our finite, The Third fort of Knowledge also, the Judging rightly concerning Truths which depend not on necessary but on Free Causes, is, in God, just as much more extensive and more infallible than in Man, as the Divine Nature and Understanding is Superiour to Ours. Nevertheless, in God, these. Two Perfections, each of them infinite in their Degree, are yet in their Kind as truly distinct from each other, as Our narrow Science of Necessary Truths, and our fallible Judgment of Contingent Truths, are things very different from each other. And God's infallible Judgment concerning Contingent Truths, does no more

alter the nature of the things, and cause them to be necessary; than Our judging right at any time concerning a contingent Truth, makes it cease to be contingent; or than Our Science of a present Truth, is any Cause of its being either True or Present. Here therefore lies the Fallacy of our Author's Argument. Because from God's foreknowing the existence of things depending on a Chain of necessary Causes, (which is stiled Prescience,) it follows that the existence of the things must needs be necessary, it being a contradiction that neceffary Causes should not produce their Effects: Therefore from God's fudging infallibly concerning things which depend not on necessary but on free Causes, (which Attribute, 'tho' totally of a different kind from the other, is yet usually stiled by the general name of Prescience;) he concludes that these things alfo, contrary to the Supposition, depend not upon Free, but upon Necessary Causes. Contrary, I say, to the Supposition in the Argument: For in the Argument drawn against Liberty from the Divine Prestience, it must not be first Supposed that things are in their own Nature necessary; but from the Divine Prescience, or power of Judging infallibly concerning Free Events, it must be proved that things otherwife supposed free, will thereby unavoidably become necessary. Which can no more be proved, than it can be proved that an Action supposed at this present time to be free, is yet (contrary to the Suppoliti-Ccc

pat the same time nevessary, because in all past time (whether foreknown or not foreknown) it could not (upon That very Supposition of its being now freely done; I say, it could not) but be future. As has been at large explained in my Discourse concerning the Being and Attributes of God, Part I. pag. 106. Edit. 4th.

His Fifth Argument, is as follows. " If P. c. 86. cc Man was not a Necessary Agent, determined by Pleasure and Pain; there would be no "Foundation for Rewards and Punishments."
pag, 96, Punishments "would be useless, unless Men were necessary Agents, and were determined by Pleasure and Pain; because, if Men " were Free or Indifferent to Pleasure and Pain, Pain could be no Motive to cause Men " to observe the Law." This Argument Supposes, that whatsoever has in itself a Power of Self-motion or Action, cannot possibly have Any Regard at all to Reafons or Motives of Action : And that an Indifferency as to Power, (that is, an equal phylical Power either of acting or of forbearing to Act;) and an Indiffarmer as to Inclination, (that is, an equal Approbation or Liking of one Object or of the contrary;) is One and the same thing. Than which, nothing can be more evidently ablurd.

VI. His Sixth and Last Argument, is: "If me. 89." Man was not a necessary Agent, determin-

"ed by Pleasure and Pain; be would have no Notion of Morality, or Motive to practife it." If "he was Indifferent to pleasure and pain, he would have no Rule to go by, and might never judge, will, and practife Right." This Argument, is merely to make up the Number; being the very same with the foregoing.

P46. 90

The remaining part of his Book, is taken up in answering Objections. The Chief of which, is; that Punishments would be useless and unjust, if Men were not Free Agents. To which he answers; that Punishments, or the Fears of Punishment, have the same effect upon intelligent necessary Agents, to determine their Actions towards the Publick Good; as Weights have upon a Clock, to make it go right. But how much foever political Ends may fometimes possibly be ferved, by doing great Injuries to Innocent Perfons, such as necessary Agents cannot but be; yet all Personal Justice and Injustice, all Right and Wrong with regard to particular Persons, is hereby totally taken away. And though Weak and Frail Men may fall under Necessities of doing great Hardsbips to particular Persons, when there is no other possible way of securing the Publick Safety; yet God Almight, we are fure, can never be reduced to any such Distress, in order to support his own Government. And therefore, if there be no fuch thing as tree Agents, 11 . 3.2 . 3.

and consequently no such thing as Personal Merit or Demerit; God, to be sure, can never either reward or punish any Creature; (Punishment, at least, he can never possibly instict;) because it must necessarily be always unjust. And thus this Author's Opinion absolutely takes away all Foundation of

Religion.

But because answering Objections of his own raising, (if he were never so able to do it,) is nothing to the purpose: I shall briefly draw up for him the Sum of what has been said, into One Objection; To which if he can give a clear and distinct Answer, after the manner of one who sincerely seeks after the Truth, and not in a loose and ambiguous Use of Words of uncertain Signification; this whole Matter may then possibly deserve to be reconsidered.

Man, either bas within himself a Principle of Action, properly speaking; that is, a Self-moving Faculty, a Principle or Power of

beginning Motion: Or he has not.

If he has within himself such a Principle; then he is a Free, and not a Necessary Agent. For every Necessary Agent is moved necessarily by something else; and then That which moves it, not the thing it self which is moved, is the True and Only Cause of the Action. That any Other thing operating upon an Agent, should efficiently and necessarily produce Self-motion in That Agent; is a direct Contradiction in Terms.

If Man has not within himself a Principle or Power of Self-motion; then every Motion and Action of Man, is strictly and properly produced by the efficiency of some extrinsick Cause: Which Cause, must be either what we usually call the Motive or Reason, upon which a Man acts; or else it must be some insensible Subtle Matter, or some other Being or Substance making an Impression upon him.

四十二 四

ıď

出山土

k

k

If the Reasons or Motives upon which a Man acts, be the immediate and efficient Cause of the Action: then either abstract Notions, such as all Reasons and Motives are, have a real Subsistence, that is, are themselves Substances; or elle That which has it self no real Subsistence, can put a Body into Motion: Ei-

ther of which, is manifestly absurd.

If insensible Subtle Matter, or any other Being or Substance, continually making impression upon a Man, be the immediate and efficicient Cause of his acting; then the Motion of That Subtle Matter or Substance, must be caused by some Other Substance, and the Motion of That by some Other, till at last we arrive at a Free Agent: And then Liberty is a possible thing: And then Man possibly may have Liberty: And if he may possibly have it, then Experience will prove that he probably, nay, that he certainly has it.

If we Never arrive at Any Free Cause: Then there is either in infinitum a Progression of Motions without any Mover, of Essets without any Cause, of things acted without

any Agent; Which is a manifest Contradiction: Or else Motion exists necessarily of

itself.

If Motion exists necessarily of itself; it must be either with a Determination every way, or one certain way: If with a Determination every way, This is no Motion at all: If with a Determination one certain way, then That Determination is either necessary, and consequently all other Determinations impossible; which is contrary to experience; Or else there must be a particular Reason of That determination, and so backwards in instinitum; which comes to the forementioned Absurdity, of Essets existing without Any Cause.

I cannot make an End, without earnestly desiring this Author seriously to consider with himself, What it is that he has all this time been pleading for. For though it might be supposed possible, that, among Nocessary Agents, a sort of a Machine of Government might be carried on, by such Weights and Springs of Rewards and Punishments, as Clacks and Watches (supposing them to feel what is done to them) are rewarded and punished withal; yet in truth and reality, according to This Supposition, there is nothing intrinsically good or evil, there is nothing personally just or unjust, there is no Behaviour of rational Creatures in any degree acceptable or unacceptable to God Almighty. Consider the Consequence of This. Superstition and Bi-

)]

; [

CET

mi |:|

lk 16

Ņ.

ď

j

gottry, (things very mechanical, as well as very mischievous to Mankind,) can never be rooted out, but by persuading Men to look upon themselves as rational Creatures, and to implant in their Minds rational Notions of Religion: Religion there can be None, without a Moral Difference of Things: A moral Difference of things there cannot be, where there is no place for Action: And Action there can be none, without Liberty.

A Free and Impartial Inquiry after Truth, where-ever it is to be found, is indeed a Noble and most Commendable Disposition: A Disposition, which every Mattought hintself to labour after, and to the utmost of his Power incourage in all Others: Tis the Great Foundation of all uleful Knowledge, of all true Virtue, and of all sincere Religi-But when a Man in his Searches into the Nature of Things, finds his Inquiries leading him towards fuch Notions, as, if they should prove true, would manifestly fubvert the very Essences of Good and Evil; The Leaft that a Sober-minded Man can in fuch a case possibly be supposed to owe to God, to Virtue, to the Dignity of a rational nature, is, that he ought to be in the highest degree fearful and suspicious of himself, least he be led away by Any Prejudice, least he be deceived by any erroneous Argument, least he suffer himself to be impoled upon by any wrong Inclination. Too great an Assurance in Arguments of Nature,

Nature, (even though at present they seemed to him to be Demonstrations;) Rejoicing in the Strength of them, and taking pleasure in the carrying of such a Cause ris what a Good Mind can never be capable of. To such a Person, the finding his own Arguments unanswerable, would be the greatest Grief: Triumphing in so melancholly a Field, would be the highest Dissatisfaction; and nothing could afford so pleasing, so agreeable a disappointment, as to find his own Reasonings shown to be inconclusive.

Ishall suggest to this Author's Consideration, only one thing surther: That All sincere Lovers of Truth and Liberty, of free and impartial Examination, are under the highest Obligations in reason and Conscience, always to make use of That Freedom which we so greatly esteem and so justly boast of, in such a manner only, as may give no occasion to Superstitious Men and Lovers of Darkness, to endeavour to retrench That Liberty of inquiring after Truth, upon which All valuable Knowledge and all true Religion Essentially depends.

BOOKS Written by the Reverend Dr Clarke; And Printed for James Knapton, at the Crown in St Paul's Church-Yard.

A Discourse concerning the Being and Attributes of God, the Obligations of Natural Religion, and the Truth and Certainty of the Christian Revelation. In Answer to Mr Hobbs, Spinoza, the Author of the Oracles of Reason, and other Deniers of Natural and Revealed Religion. Being sixteen Sermons Preached at the Cathedral Church of St Paul, in the Years 1704 and 1705, at the Lecture Founded by the Honourable Robert Boyl, Esq.; The Fourth Edition, corrected. There are added in this Edition, several Letters to Dr Clarke from a Gentleman in Glocestershire, relating to the sirst Volume; with the Drs Answers.

A Paraphrase on the four Evangelists. Wherein, for the clearer Understanding the Sacred History, the whole Text and Paraphrase are Printed in separate Columns overagainst each other. Together with critical Notes on the more difficult Passages. Very useful for Families. In

two Volumes. The 2d. Edition, 8vo. pr. 12 s.

Three Practical Essays on Baptism, Confirmation, and Repentance: Containing sull Instructions for a holy Life, with earnest Exhortations, especially to young Persons, drawn from the Consideration of the Severity of the Discipline of the Primitive Church. The Third Edition. This new Edition makes 11 Sheets in Twelves, on good Paper, and a fair Letter. Pr. 15. and for the Encouragement of the Charitable, 116 for 51. bound.

A Letter to Mr Dodwell; wherein all the Arguments in his Epistolary Discourse against the Immortality of the

Soul, are particularly answered, and the Judgment of the Fathers concerning that Matter truly represented. gether with Four Letters in Answer to the Author of Remarks on the Letter to Mr Dodwell. To which is added, some Reflections on that part of a Book call'd Amountor. or, the Defense of Milton's Life, which relates to the Writings of the Primitive Fathers, and the Canon of the New Testament. pr. 51.

The great Duty of universal Love and Charity. Sermon preach'd before the Queen, at St James's Chapel,

pr. 3 d.

A Sermon preach'd at the Lady Cook's Funeral, pt. 1 d. A Sermon preach'd before the House of Commons, pr. 2d. A Sermon preach'd before the Queen on the 8th of March, 1709-10, pr. 2 d.

A Sermon preach'd at St. James's Church on the Thanksgiving Day, Non. 7th, 1710. pr. 3 d.

The Government of Passion. A Sermon preach'd before

the Queen at St James's Chapel. pr. 3 d.

Jacobi Rohaulti Physica. Latine vertit, resensuit, & uberioribus jam Annotationibus ex illustrissimi Maaci Newtoni Philosophia maximam partem haustis, amplificavit & ornavit S. Clarke. Accedunt etiam in hac tertia Editione, nove aliquot Tabule eri Incise; & Annotationes multum funt austa, 800. price 8 s.

If. Newtoni Optice. Latine reddidit S. Clarke, S. T. P. The Scripture-Doctrine of the Trinity. In three Parts. Wherein all the Texts in the New Testament relating to that Doctrine, and the principal Passages in the Liturgy of the Church of England, are collected, compared, and

explain'd. pr. 6 i.

A Letter to the Reverend Dr Wells, Rector of Cotefbach in Leicestersbire, . In Answer to his Remarks, &c. pr. 13.

A Reply to the Objections of Robert Nellon Eig; and of an Anonymous Author, against Dr Clarke's Scriptures Doctrine of the Trinity; being a Commentary upon Forty select Texts of Scripture. To which is added, an Answer to the Remarks of the Author of some Considerations concerning the Trinity, and the Ways of Managing that Controversy, in 8vo. pr. 4s.

, . . • ř

. • · . • •

